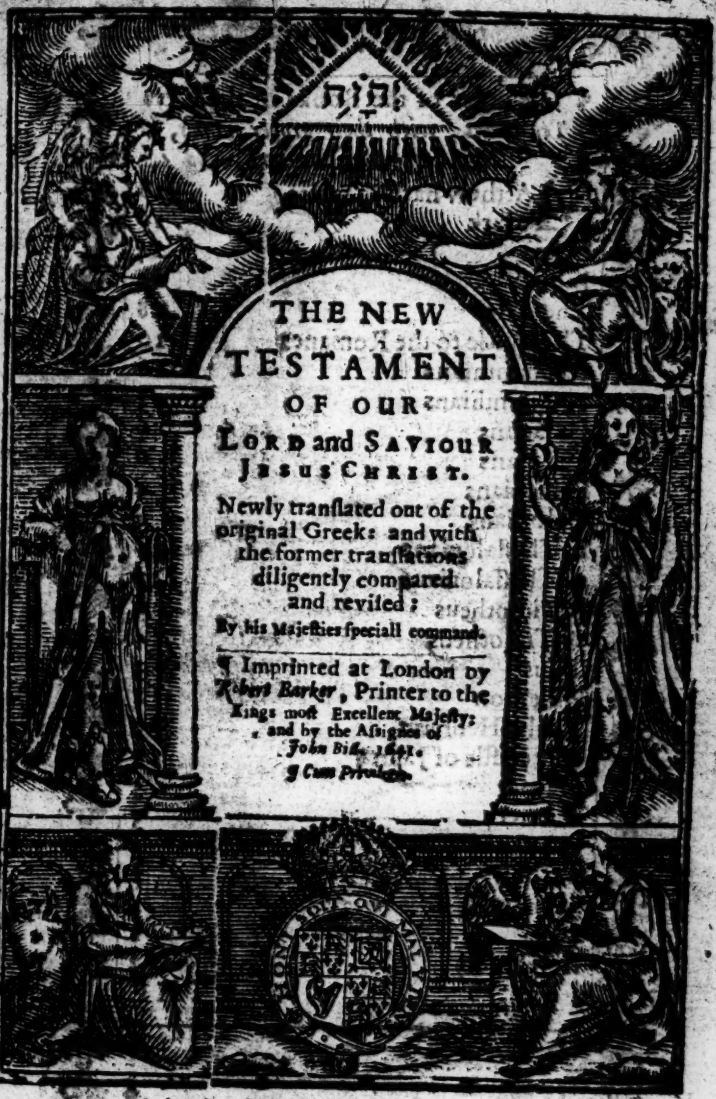


THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD and SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST.

Newly translated out of the original Greek: and with the former translations diligently compared and revised;

By his Majesties speciall command.

¶ Imprinted at London by *Robert Barker*, Printer to the Kings most Excellent Majesty: and by the Assignes of *John Bill*. 1611.

¶ Cum Privilegio.

¶ The order of the Books of the New *Testament, with their proper names, and number of Chapters.*

Matthew hath chapters	28
Mark	16
Luke	24
John	21
The Acts	28
The epistle to the Romanes	16
1. Corinthians	16
2. Corinthians	13
Galatians	6
Ephesians	6
Philippians	4
Colossians	4
1. Thessalonians	5
2. Thessalonians	3
1. Timotheus	6
2. Timotheus	4
Titus	3
Philemon	1
To the Hebrews	13
The epistle of James	5
1. Peter	5
2. Peter	3
1. John	5
2. John	1
3. John	1
Jude	1
Revelation	21

BRITISH MUSEUM

¶ THE

¶ THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Joseph. 18 His conception and birth: 19,23 His names.

THE book of the generation of JESUS CHRIST, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 *Abraham begat Isaac, and *Isaac begat Jacob, and *Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

3 And *Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and *Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram.

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

6 And *Jesse begat David the king, and *David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias.

7 And *Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

10 And Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

11 And ‖ Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, are

* Luke 3 23.
* Gene. 21.3.
* Gene. 25.26.
* Gen. 29.35.
* Gene. 38.27.
* Ruth. 4.18.
1. Chro. 2.5.
*1 Sam. 16. and 17.12.
* 2 Sam. 12.24.
*1 Chro. 3.10.
*2 Kings 20.21.
‖ Chro. 3.15.
‖ Some read Josias begat Jakim, and * Jakim begat Jechonias.
*1 Chro. 3.16,17.

fourteen generations: and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the * birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: (Luke 1.27.) when as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 * And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his Name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins. (Luke 1.31.)

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with childe, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his Name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us) (Esaiah 7.14.) (Or, his Name shall be called.)

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son, and he called his Name Jesus.

CHAP. II.

1 The wise men out of the east, are directed to Christ by a star. 11 They worship him. 14 Joseph fleeth into Egypt with Jesus and his mother.

NOw when * Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, (Luke 2.6.7.) in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, & are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chiefe priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

6 * And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda art not least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour that shall ‖ rule my people Israel. (Micah 5.2.) (John 7.42.) (‖ Or, feed.)

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently

diligently for the young childe, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come & worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young childe was.

10 ¶ When they saw the star, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they || presented unto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. || Or, offered.

12 And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word; for Herod will seek the young childe to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt have I called my Son. * Hosea 11. 1.

16 ¶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeers old, and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by * Jeremie the prophet, saying, * Jer. 31. 15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childes life.

21 And he arose, and took the young childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 John preacheth: his apparell and meat: 7 He baptizeth
8 The fruits of repentance. 13 Christ is baptized.

IN those dayes came * John the baptist, preaching in the wildernesse of Iudea,

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels haire, and a leathern girdle about his loines, and his meat was locusts and wilde honey.

5 Then went out to him Ierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sins.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits || meet for repentance.

9 And think not to say within your selues, * We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

11 ¶ I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but will burn up the chaffe with unquenchable fire.

13 ¶ Then cometh Iesus from Galilee to Iordan unto Iohn, to be baptized of him.

14 But Iohn forbad him, saying, I haue need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Iesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heauens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

17 And lo, a voice from heauen, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

* Mark. 1.4. Luke 3.2.
* Isaiah 40.3. Mark 1.3.
* Chap. 12.34.
|| Or, answerable to amend mens life.
* John 8.39.
* Chap. 7.19.
* Mark 1.7. Luke 3.16. John 1.26.
* Mark 1.9. Luke 3.21.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

3 Christ is tempted, and overcometh. 17 Beginneth to preach.
18 Calleth some to be apostles.

THen was * Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilder-
nesse to be tempted of the devill. * Mark 1.12.
2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes and fourty nights, Luke 4.1.
he was afterward an hungred.
3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be
the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.
4 But he answered and said, It is written, * Man shall * Deut.
not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth 8.3.
out of the mouth of God.
5 Then the devill taketh him up into the holy city, and
setteth him on a pinacle of the temple,
6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast
thy self down: for it is written, * He shall give his angels * Psal.
charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear 91.11.
thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.
7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, * Thou shalt * Deut.
not tempt the Lord thy God. 6.16.
8 Again, the devill taketh him up into an exceeding high
mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world,
and the glory of them:
9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if
thou wilt fall down and worship me.
10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for
it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and * Deut.
him only shalt thou serve. 6.13.
11 Then the devill leaveth him, and behold, angels came & 10.20
and ministred unto him. * Mark
12 ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was ||cast 1.14.
into prison, he departed into Galilee. Luke
13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Ca- 4.14.
pernaum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Za- John
bulon and Nephthali: 4.43.
14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esai- ||Or, de-
as the prophet, saying, livered
15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by up.
the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: * Isai.
16 The people which sat in darknesse, saw great light: and 9.1.
to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is
sprung up.
17 ¶ * From that time Jesus began to preach, and to * Mark
say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 1.14.
18 ¶ * And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two * Mark
brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, cast- 1.16.
ing a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)
19 And he said unto them, Follow me, and I will make
you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway lett their nets, and followed him.
21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.
22 And they immediatly left the ship and their father, and followed him.
23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.
24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.
25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

1 Who are blessed. 13 The apostles are the salt and light of world.

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.
2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,
3 * Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.
5 * Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.
6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: * for they shall be filled.
7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.
8 * Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.
9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.
10 * Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsly for my sake.
12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.
13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, & to be troden under foot of men.
14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill cannot be hid.

* Luke 6.20.
* Psal. 37.11.
* Isai. 65.13.
* Psal. 24.4.
* 1 Pet. 3.14.
* 1 Pet. 4.14.
†Gr. lying.
* Mark 9.50. Luke 14.34.

25 Neither

15 Neither do men * light a candle, and put it under ‖ a bushell: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good works, & glorifie your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verily I say unto you, * Till heaven and earth passe, one iot or one title shall in no wise passe from the law, till all be fulfilled.

19 * Whosoever therefore shall breake one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shalbe called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach them, the same shalbe called great in the kingdom of heaven.

20 For I say unto you, that except your righteousnesse shall exceed the righteousnesse of the scribes and pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was said ‖ by them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment.

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Racha, shalbe in danger of the councell: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee;

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 ‖ Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

29 * And if thy right eye ‖ offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off and cast it from thee, for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

* Mark 4.21. Luke 8.16. and 11. 33.

‖ The word in the original signifieth a measure containing about a pinte lesse then a peck.

* 1 Pet. 2.12.

* Luke 16.17.

* James 2.10.

‖ Or, them.

* Exod. 29.12. Deut. 5.7.

* Luke 12.58.

* Exod. 20.14.

* Chap. 18.8. Mark 9.47.

‖ Or, do cause thee to offend.

* Deut. 24.1.
31 It hath been said, * Whosoever shall put away his wife let him give her a writing of divorcement.

* Luke 16.18. 1 Cor. 7.10.
32 But I say unto you, that * whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

* Exod. 20.7. Levit. 19.12. Deut. 5.11.
33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.

34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great king.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

* James 5.12.
37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more then these, cometh of evill.

* Exod. 24.21. Levit. 24.20. Deut. 19.21.
38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

* Luke 6.29. Rom. 12.17. 1 Cor. 6.1. * Deut. 15.8.
39 But I say unto you, * that ye resist not evill: but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.

40 And if any man shall sue thee at the law, and take thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

41 And whosoever shall compell thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

42 Give to him that asketh thee, and * from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

* Levit. 19.18. * Luke 6.27. * Luke 23.34. Acts 7.60. * Luke 6.32.
44 But I say unto you, * Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray * for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you:

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his sun to rise on the evill and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 * For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicanes the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do you more then others? do not even the Publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of alms. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiving. 19 Our treasure. 24 God and mammon.

Or, with.
TAke heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

2 There

2 Therefore, *when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth:

4 That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain *repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: For your Father knoweth what things ye have need of before ye ask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: *Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 *For, if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you:

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face;

18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for your selves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal.

20 But lay up for your selves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal.

21 For

*Rom. 12.8. or, cause not a trumpet to be sounded.

*Eccles. 7.14.

*Luke 11.2.

*Mark 11.25.

*Luke 12.33. 1 Tim. 6.19.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Luke 11.34. 22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

23 But if thine eye be evill, thy whole body shall be full of darkenesse. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkenesse, how great is that darkenesse!

Luke 16.13. 24 ¶ No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Psal. 55.22. Luke 12.22. 1. Pet. 5.7. 25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on: is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin.

29 And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evill thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ reproveth rash judgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs. 13 The wide and strait gate.

Luke 6.37. Rom. 2.1 Mark 4.24. Luke 6.38. 1 JUdge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

Luke 6.41. 3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; & behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again, and rent you.

7 ¶ * Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde, knock, and it shall be opened unto you. * Chap. 21.22. Mark 11.24. Luke 11.9. John 16.24. James 1.6.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evill, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things * whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. * Luke 6.31.

13 ¶ * Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: * Luke 13.24.

14 ‖ Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life and few there be that finde it. ‖ Or, how

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: * Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? * Luke 6.43.

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evill fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 * Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire. * Chap. 3.10.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven. * Rom. 2.13. James 1.22.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name have cast out devils? and in thy Name done many wonderfull works?

23 And then will I profesſe unto them, * I never knew you, * depart from me ye that work iniquity. * Luke 13.27. * Psal. 6.8.

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock: * Luke 6.47.

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

* Luke 11.34. 22 * The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

23 But if thine eye be evill, thy whole body shall be full of darknesse. If therefore the light that is in thee be darknesse, how great is that darknesse!

* Luke 16.13. * Psal 55.22. Luke 12.22. 1. Pet. 5.7. 24 ¶ * No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

25 Therefore I say unto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on: is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin.

29 And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evill thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ reproveth rash judgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs. 13 The wide and strait gate.

* Luke 6.37. Rom. 2.1 * Mark 4.24. Luke 6.38. * Luke 6.41. 1 * Judge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged: * and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; & behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again, and rent you.

7 ¶ * Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde, knock, and it shall be opened unto you. * Chap. 21.22. Mark 11.24. Luke 11.9. John 16.24. James 1.6.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evill, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things * whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. * Luke 6.31.

13 ¶ * Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: * Luke 13.24.

14 ‖ Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life and few there be that finde it. ‖ Or, how

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: * Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? * Luke 6.43.

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evill fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 * Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire. * Chap. 3.10.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven. * Rom. 2.13. James 1.22.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name have cast out devils? and in thy Name done many wonderfull works?

23 And then will I profesſe unto them, * I never knew you, * depart from me ye that work iniquity. * Luke 13.27. * Psal. 6.8. * Luke 6.47.

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

* Mark 1.22. Luke 4.32. 28 And it came to passe when Jesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as one having authoritie, and not as the scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

2 Christ cleanseth the leper. 28 The devils driven out of two men, 31 go into the herd of swine.

When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

* Mark 1.40. Luke 5.12. 2 * And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded for a testimonie unto them.

* Levit. 14.4. * Luke 5.1. 5 ℭ * And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lyeth at home sick of the palsie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word onely, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having souldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkenesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeved, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same houre.

14 ℭ * And

14 ¶ * And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives mother laid, and sick of a fever. * Mark 1.29. Luke 4.38.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministred unto them.

16 ¶ * When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick: * Mark 1.32. Luke 4.40.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, * Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses. *Isaiah 53.4. 1. Pet. 2.24.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 * And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. *Luke 9.57.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 * And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. * Mark 4.37. Luke 8.23.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. * Mark 5.1. Luke 8.26.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God: art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine, feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their wayes into the citie, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 Christ cureth the palsie, 9 calleth Matthew, 10 eateth with publicanes and sinners.

AND he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

a Mark 2.3. Luke 5.18. 2 a And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsie,) Son, be of good chear, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evill in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsie) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

b Mark 2.14. Luke 5.27. 9 ¶ b And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custome: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicanes and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicanes and sinners?

c Hosea 6.6. Chap. 12.7. d 1 Tim. 1.15. e Mark 2.18. Luke 5.33. 12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, c I will have mercy and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, d but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, e Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them?

but the dayes will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of || new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. ||Or, raw, or unwrought cloth.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ * While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. * Mark 5.22. Luke 8.41.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve yeers, came behinde him, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And || the same hereof went abroad into all that land. ||Or, this fame.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ * As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devill. * Luke 11.14.

33 And when the devill was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. * Chap. 12.24. Mark 3.21. Luke 11.15.

34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out the devils through the prince of the devils.

* Mark 6.6. Luke 13.22.
35 * And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

*Mark 6.34. ‖Or, were tired, & lay down
36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they ‖ fainted, and were scattered abroad, * as sheep having no shepherd.

*Numb. 27.17. * Luke 10.2.
37 Then saith he unto his disciples, * The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.
38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

CHAP. X.

1 The apostles sent to do miracles, 5 and to teach.

* Mark 3.14. Luke 9.1. ‖Or, over.
AND *when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power ‖ against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.
2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother:
3 Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the Publicane, James the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus:
4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.
5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

* Acts 13.46. * Luke 10.9.
6 * But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
7 And as ye go, preach, saying, * The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

* Mark 6.8. *Luk.9.3 & 22.35. ‖Or, get. * Luke 10.7. 1 Tim. 5.18. * Luke 10.8. * Mark 6.11. * Acts 13.51.
8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.
9 * ‖ Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse in your purses:
10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: (* for the workman is worthy of his meat)
11 * And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence.
12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.
13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.
14 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when ye depart out of that house or city, * shake off the dust of your feet.
15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land

of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, then for that citie.

16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and || harmlesse as doves.

17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the councels, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them and the Gentiles.

19 * But when they deliver you up, take no thought how, or what ye shall speak; for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 * And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the childe: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: * but he that endureth to the end, shall be saved.

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, ye shall not || have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

24 * The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord; if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his houshold?

26 Fear them not therefore: * for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkneſſe, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house tops.

28 * And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a || farthing: and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 * But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

32 * Whosoever therefore shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 * But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 * Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance * against his father;

* Luke 10.3.
||Or, simple.
* Mark 13.11. luk 12.11
* Luke 21.16.
* Mark 13.13.
||Or, end, or, finish.
* Luke 6.40. John 13.16.
* Mark 4.22. luk 8.17. and 12.2
* Luke 12.4.
|| It is in value half peny farthing, in the original, as being the tenth part of the Romã peny
* 2 Sam. 14.11. act. 27.34
* Luke 12.8.
* Mark 8.38.
* Luke 9.26. 2 Tim. 2.12.
* Luke 12.51.
* Micah 7.6.

father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his own household.

* Luke 14.26. * Chap. 16.24. Luke 9.23. Mark 8.34. John 12.25.

37 * He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

40 ¶ * He that receiveth you, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

* Luke 10.16. John 13.20.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward: and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

* Mark 9.41.

42 * And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water only, in ỳ name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, He shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 John sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimony concerning John.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

* Luke 7.18.

2 * Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

* Isaiah 35.6. * Isaiah 61.1.

5 * The blinde receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and * the poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

* Mal. 3.1.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwith-

notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater then he.

12 * And from the dayes of John the Baptist, untill now, the kingdom of heaven ‖ suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets & the law prophesied untill John.

14 And if ye will receive it, this is * Elias, which was for to come.

15 He that hath eares to hear, let him hear.

16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devill.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners: but wisdom is justified of her children.

20 ¶ * Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mightie works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mightie works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained untill this day.

24 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgement, then for thee.

25 ¶ * At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 * All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the Father: * neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

28 ¶ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, & learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: * and ye shall finde rest unto your souls.

30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

* Luke 16.16.

‖ Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men.

* Mal. 4.5.

* Luke 7.31.

* Luke 10.13.

* Luke 10.21.

* John 3.35.

* John 6.46.

* Jere. 6.16.

* 1. John 5.3.

CHAP. XII.

1 The disciples pluck the ears of corn on the sabbath. 31 Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.

* Deut. 23.25. Mark 2.23. * Luke 6.1. * 1.Sam. 21,6. * Exod. 29.32,33 Levit. 8.31 and 24.9. * Num. 28.9. * Hosea 6.6. Chap. 9.13. * Mark 3.1. Luke 6.6.

AT that time * Jesus went on the sabbath day thorow the corn, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do upon the sabbath day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read: * what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him,

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, * but only for the priests?

5 Or have ye not read in the * law, how that on the sabbath-dayes the priests in the temple prophane the sabbath, and are blamelesse?

6 But I say unto you, that in this place is one greater then the temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, * I will have mercie and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltlesse.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

9 * And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheep? wherefore it is lawfull to do well on the sabbath dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

Or, took counsell.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and held a counsell against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

* Isaiah 42.1.

18 * Behold my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoaking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgement unto victorie.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 ¶ *Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devill, blinde and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumb both spake and saw. *Luke 11.14.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the son of David?

24 *But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. *Chap. 9.34.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it self, is brought to desolation: and every citie, or house divided against it self, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

29 Or else how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first binde the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I say unto you, *All manner of sin and blasphemie shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemie against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. *Mark. 3.28. Luke 12.10.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. 1 John 5.16.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good, or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evill, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. *Luke 6.45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evill man out of the evill treasure, bringeth forth evill things.

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee.

39 But he answered and said to them, An evill and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.

40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Son of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it, * because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

42 * The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

43 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out: and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in and dwell there: * and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

* Chap. 6.1. Luke 11.29. 1. Cor. 1.22.
* Jonah 1.17.
* Jonah 3.5.
* 1. King 10.1.
* Luke 11.24.
* Heb. 6.4 and 10.26. 2. pet. 2.20.
* Mark 3.31. Luke 8.20.

CHAP. XIII.

3 Of the sower, and of his seed. 24. Divers other parables.
35 Why Christ spake in parables.

* Mark 4.1.

THe same day went Jesus out of the house, * and sat by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And

3 And he ſpake many things unto them in parables, ſaying, * Behold, a ſower went forth to ſow.

4 And when he ſowed, ſome ſeeds fell by the way ſide, and the fowls came and devoured them up. * Luke 8.5.

5 Some fell upon ſtony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they ſprung up, becauſe they had no deepneſſe of earth:

6 And when the ſun was up, they were ſcorched; and becauſe they had not root, they withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thorns: and the thorns ſprung up, and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, ſome an hundred fold, ſome ſixtie fold, ſome thirtie fold.

9 Who hath eares to hear, let him hear.

10 And the diſciples came, and ſaid unto him, Why ſpeakeſt thou unto them in parables?

11 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, Becauſe it is given unto you to know the myſteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 *For whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given, and he ſhall have more abundance, but whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken away even that he hath. * Chap. 25.29.

13 Therefore ſpeak I to them in parables: becauſe they ſeeing, ſee not: and hearing, they hear not, neither do they underſtand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Eſaias, which ſaith, * By hearing ye ſhall hear, and ſhall not underſtand: and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and ſhall not perceive. * Iſaiah 6.9. Mark 4.12. Luke 8.10. John 12.40. Acts 28. 26. Rom. 11.8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed groſſe, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have cloſed: leſt at any time they ſhould ſee with their eyes, and hear with their eares, and ſhould underſtand with their heart, and ſhould be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

16 But bleſſed are your eyes, for they ſee, and your eares, for they hear.

17 For verily I ſay unto you, *that many prophets and righteous men have deſired to ſee thoſe things which ye ſee, and have not ſeen them: and to hear thoſe things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the ſower. * Luke 10.24.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and underſtandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was ſown in his heart: this is he which received ſeed by the way ſide.

20 But he that received the ſeed into ſtonie places, the ſame is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himſelf, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or perſecution ariſeth becauſe of the word, by and by he is offended.

37 For by thy words thou ſhalt be juſtified, and by thy words thou ſhalt be condemned.

* Chap. 6.1. Luke 11.29. 1. Cor. 1.22. 38 ¶ * Then certain of the ſcribes and of the Phariſees anſwered, ſaying, Maſter, we would ſee a ſigne from thee.

39 But he anſwered and ſaid to them, An evill and adulterous generation ſeeketh after a ſigne, and there ſhall no ſigne be given to it, but the ſigne of the prophet Jonas.

* Jonah 1.17. 40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: ſo ſhall the Son of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

* Jonah 3.5. 41 The men of Nineveh ſhall riſe in judgement with this generation, and ſhall condemn it, * becauſe they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

*1. King 10.1. 42 *The queen of the ſouth ſhall riſe up in the judgement with this generation, and ſhall condemn it: for ſhe came from the uttermoſt parts of the earth to hear the wiſdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

* Luke 11.24. 43 * When the unclean ſpirit is gone out of a man, he walketh thorow dry places, ſeeking reſt, and findeth none.

44 Then he ſaith, I will return into my houſe from whence I came out: and when he is come, he findeth it empty, ſwept and garniſhed.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himſelf ſeven other ſpirits more wicked then himſelf, and they enter in and dwell there: * and the laſt ſtate of that man is worſe then the firſt. Even ſo ſhall it be alſo unto this wicked generation.

* Heb. 6 4 and 10.26. 2. pet. 2.20. 46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren ſtood without, deſiring to ſpeak with him.

* Mark 3.31. Luke 8.20. 47 Then one ſaid unto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſpeak with thee.

48 But he anſwered and ſaid unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he ſtretched forth his hand towards his diſciples, and ſaid, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whoſoever ſhall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the ſame is my brother, and ſiſter, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

3 Of the ſower, and of his ſeed. 24. Divers other parables.
35 Why Chriſt ſpake in parables.

* Mark 4.1. THe ſame day went Jeſus out of the houſe, * and ſat by the ſea ſide.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, ſo that he went into a ſhip, and ſat, and the whole multitude ſtood on the ſhore.

3 And

3 And he ſpake many things unto them in parables, ſaying, * Behold, a ſower went forth to ſow.

4 And when he ſowed, ſome ſeeds fell by the way ſide, and the fowls came and devoured them up. * Luke 8.5.

5 Some fell upon ſtony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they ſprung up, becauſe they had no deepneſſe of earth:

6 And when the ſun was up, they were ſcorched; and becauſe they had not root, they withered away.

7 And ſome fell among thorns: and the thorns ſprung up, and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, ſome an hundred fold, ſome ſixtie fold, ſome thirtie fold.

9 Who hath eares to hear, let him hear.

10 And the diſciples came, and ſaid unto him, Why ſpeakeſt thou unto them in parables?

11 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, Becauſe it is given unto you to know the myſteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 * For whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given, and he ſhall have more abundance, but whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken away even that he hath. * Chap. 25.29.

13 Therefore ſpeak I to them in parables: becauſe they ſeeing, ſee not: and hearing, they hear not, neither do they underſtand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Eſaias, which ſaith, * By hearing ye ſhall hear, and ſhall not underſtand: and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and ſhall not perceive. * Iſaiah 6.9. Mark 4.12. Luke 8.10. John 12.40. Acts 28. 26. Rom. 11.8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed groſſe, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have cloſed; leſt at any time they ſhould ſee with their eyes, and hear with their eares, and ſhould underſtand with their heart, and ſhould be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

16 But bleſſed are your eyes, for they ſee, and your eares, for they hear.

17 For verily I ſay unto you, *that many prophets and righteous men have deſired to ſee thoſe things which ye ſee, and have not ſeen them: and to hear thoſe things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the ſower. * Luke 10.24.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and underſtandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was ſown in his heart: this is he which received ſeed by the way ſide.

20 But he that received the ſeed into ſtonie places, the ſame is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himſelf, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or perſecution ariſeth becauſe of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He

22 He also that receiued seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choak the word, and he becometh unfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it: which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred fold, some sixtie, some thirtie.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened vnto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the householder came and said vnto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, An enemy hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them vp?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather vp the tares, ye root vp also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together vntill the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth to them, saying * The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is growen it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ * Another parable spake he vnto them; The kingdom of heaven is like vnto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three † measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 * All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not vnto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will vtter things which haue been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said vnto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man:

38 The

* Mark 4.30. Luke 13.19.
* Luke 13.20.
† The word in the greek is a measure containing about a peck & an half, wanting little more then a pinte.
* Mark 4.33
* Psal. 78. 2.

38 The field is the world: the good seed are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

39 The enemy that sowed them is the devill: * the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels. * Joel 3.13.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. Revel. 14.15.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all ‖ things that offend, and them which do iniquitie: ‖ Or, scandals.

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath eares to hear, let him hear. * Dan. 12.3.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kinde.

48 Which when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 * And when he was come into his own countrey, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighties works? * Mark 6.1. Luke 4.16.

55 * Is not this the carpenters son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? * John 6.42.

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And

* Mark 6.4. Luke 4.24. John 4.44.

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Herods opinion of Christ. 3 John Baptist beheaded. 15 Five loaves and two fishes.

Mark 6.14. Luk. 9.7.

AT that time * Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works || do shew forth themselves in him.

|| Or, are wrought by him.

3 ¶ * For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.

* Luke 3.19.20.

4 For John said unto him, * It is not lawfull for thee to have her.

* Levit. 18.16. and 20. 21.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, * because they counted him as a prophet.

* Chap. 21.26.

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And she being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oaths sake, and them which sate with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsell: and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

* Mark 6.32. Luke 9.10.

13 ¶ * When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

* Mark 6.35. Joh. 6.5.

15 ¶ * And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart: give ye them to eat.

17 And they said unto him, We have here but five loaves and two fishes.

18 He

18 he ſaid, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to ſit down on the graſſe, and took the five loaves and the two fiſhes, and looking up to heaven, he bleſſed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his diſciples, and the diſciples to the multitude.
20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.
21 And they that had eaten were about five thouſand men, beſide women and children.
22 ¶ And ſtraightway Jeſus conſtrained his diſciples to get into a ſhip, and to go before him unto the other ſide, while he ſent the multitudes away.
23 * And when he had ſent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: * and when the evening was come, he was there alone: * Mark 6.46.
24 But the ſhip was now in the midſt of the ſea, toſſed with waves: for the winde was contrary. * John 6.16.
25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jeſus went unto them walking on the ſea.
26 And when the diſciples ſaw him walking on the ſea, they were troubled, ſaying, It is a ſpirit: & they cried out for fear.
27 But ſtraightway Jeſus ſpake unto them, ſaying, Be of good cheer: it is I, be not afraid.
28 And Peter anſwered him, and ſaid, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.
29 And he ſaid, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ſhip, he walked on the water to go to Jeſus.
30 But when he ſaw the winde ||boiſterous, he was afraid: and beginning to ſink, he cryed, ſaying, Lord ſave me. ||Or, ſtrong.
31 And immediatly Jeſus ſtretched forth his hand, and caught him, and ſaid unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didſt thou doubt?
32 And when they were come into the ſhip, the winde ceaſed
33 Then they that were in the ſhip, came and worſhipped him, ſaying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.
34 ¶ * And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. * Mark 6.53.
35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they ſent out into all that countrey round about, and brought unto him all that were diſeaſed,
36 And beſought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment, and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Gods commandments, and mans traditions. 11 What defileth a man.

Then * came to Jeſus ſcribes and Phariſees, which were of Jeruſalem, ſaying, * Mark 7.1.

2 Why

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered, and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?

* Exod. 20.12. Deut. 5.16. 4 For God commanded, saying, * Honour thy father and mother: and * he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

* Exod. 21.17. Levit. 20.9. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, * It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me,

Prov. 20.20. 6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

* Mat. 7. 11.12. 7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,

* Isaiah 29.13. 8 * This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

* Mark 7.14. 10 ¶ * And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

* John 15.2. 13 But he answered and said, * Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

* Luke 6.39. 14 Let them alone: *they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

* Marke 7.17. 15 * Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

* Gen. 6.5. and 8.21. 19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnesse, blasphemies.

* Mark 7.24. 20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ * Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coast:

coasts, and cryed unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

24 But he answered and said, * I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. *Chap. 13.6.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29 * And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and sate down there. * Mark 7.31.

30 * And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blinde, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, and he healed them: * Isai. 35 5.6.

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 ¶ * Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. * Mark 8.1.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves, and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The signe of Jonas. 6 The leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 21 Christ foresheweth his death.

* Mark 8.11. Luke 12.54. THe * Pharisees also with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, but can ye not discern the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread?

* Chap. 14.17. 9 * Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

* Chap. 15.34. 10 * Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bad them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, * Whom do men say, that I the Son of man am?

* Mark 8.27. Luke 9.18. 14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

* John 6.69. 16 And Simon Peter answered and said, * Thou art Christ the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

* John 1.42. 18 And I say also unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

19 * And

19 * And I will give unto thee the keyes of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. * John 20. 23.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

24 ¶ * Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me. * Chap. 10. 38. Mark 8. 34.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glorie of his Father, with his angels: * and then he shall reward every man according to his works. * Psal. 62. 12. Rom 2. 6

28 Verily I say unto you, * There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom. * Mark 9. 1. Luke 9. 27.

CHAP. XVII.

¶ The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healeth the lunatick. 22 He foretelleth his own passion, 24 and payeth tribute.

AND * after six dayes Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, * Mark 9. 2. Luke 9. 28.

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voyce out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. * 2. Pet. 1. 17.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

* Chap. 11. 14.

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come and restore all things:

* Mark 9. 11.

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, & saying,

* Mark 9. 17.

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

* Luke 9. 38.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him, and the childe was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove, and nothing shall be unpossible unto you.

* Luke 17. 6. * Chap. 20. 17. Mark 9. 31. Luke 9. 44.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer & fasting.

22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received || tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

|| Called in the original Didrachma, being in value fifteen pence.

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwith-

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me & thee. ‖ Or, a stater. It is half an ounce of silver, in value two shillings sixpence, after five shillings the ounce.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences, 21 and forgiving one another.

AT * the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? * Mark 9.33. Luke 9.46.

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. * Chap. 19.14. 1. Cor. 14.20.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little childe in my Name, receiveth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleeve in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. * Mark 9.42. Luke 17.1,2.

7 ¶ Woe unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. * Chap. 5.30. Mark 9.43.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. * Luke 19.10.

12 * How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? * Luke 15.4.

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. * Levit. 19.17. * Luke 17.3.

15 ¶ Moreover * if thy brother shall trespasse against thee,

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

* Chap. 11.14.

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly * Mark 9.11. shall first come and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there * Mark 9.17. came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, & saying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore * Luke 9.38. vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him, and the childe was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * If ye have faith as a grain of * Chap. 17.20. mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove, and nothing shall be unpossible unto you. Mark 9.11. Luke 9.44.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer & fasting.

22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that || Called in the original Didrachma, being in value fifteen pence. received || tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon: of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwith-

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde ‖ a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me & thee.

‖ Or, a stater. It is half an ounce of silver.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences, 21 and forgiving one another.

AT * the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? * Mark 9.33. Luke 9.46.

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. * Chap. 19.14. 1. Cor. 14.20.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little childe in my Name, receiveth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. * Mark 9.42. Luke 17.1,2.

7 ¶ Woe unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. * Chap. 5.30. Mark 9.43.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. * Luke 19.10.

12 How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? * Luke 15.4.

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that sheep, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. * Levit. 19.17. Luke 17.3.

15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother shall trespasse against thee,

ne and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man, and a publicane.

18 Verily I say unto you, * whatsoever ye shall binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shal be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? * 'till seven times?

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but until seventie times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which ought him ten thousand || talents.

25 But inasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down and || worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which ought him an hundred || pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorrie, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pitie on thee?

34 And

* Deut. 19.15. joh. 8.17 2. Cor. 13.1. Heb. 10.28.

* 1. Cor. 5.9. 2. Thess. 3.14.

* John 20.23. 1. Cor. 5.4.

* Luke 17.4.

|| A talent is 750. ounces of silver, which after five shillings the ounce is 187. pound, ten shillings.

|| Or, besought him.

|| The Romane peny is the eight part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce, is seven pence half penie.

34 And his Lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.
35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sick, 3 and 7 Touching divorcement. 16 How to attain everlasting life.

AND it came to passe, * that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan: * Mark 10.1.
2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.
3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause?
4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, * that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female? * Gene. 1.27.
5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and * they twain shall be one flesh. * Gene 2.24.
6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder. Ephes. 5.31.
7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then command to give a writting of divorcement, and to put her away? * 1 Cor. 6.16.
8 He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardnesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. * Deut. 24.1.
9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery. * Chap. 5.32. Mark 10.11. Luke 16.18.
10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.
11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. 1. Cor. 7.11.
12 For there are some eunuches, which were so born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuches, which were made eunuches of men: and there be eunuches, which have made themselves eunuches for the kingdom of heavens sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.
13 ¶ * Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. * Mark 10.13 Luke 18.15.
14 And Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. * Mark 10.17. Luke 18.18.
15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.
16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said unto him, Good mas-

ter, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternall life?

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, * Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: What lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camell to go thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we have therefore?

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in ỹ throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my Names sake, shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 But many that are first, shalbe last, & the last shalbe first.

CHAP. XX.

1 Of the labourers in the vineyard. 20 Christ teacheth his disciples to be lowly.

FOr the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a ‖ penie a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

* Exod. 20.13.

& Mark 10.28. & Luke 18.28.

* Luke 21.30.

* Chap. 20.16. Mark 10.31. Luke 13.30.

‖ The Romane penie is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce is seven pence half penie.

2 And

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, and they likewise received every man a peny.

11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equall unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy way, I will give unto this last even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evill because I am good?

16 *So the last shall be first, and the first last, for many be called, but few chosen.

17 ¶ * And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

19 *And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day he shall rise again.

20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdom.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask.

or, have continued one hour onely.

* Chap. 19.30.

* Mark 10.32. Luke 18.31.

* John 18.32.

* Mark 10.35.

Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

*Luke 22.25. 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, *Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

*Phil. 2.7. 28 Even as the *Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

*Mark 10.46. Luke 18.35. 29 *And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way-side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediatly their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth to Jerusalem upon an asse, 12 and driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple.

*Mark 11.1. Luke 19.29. *Isai. 62.11. Zech. 9.9. John 12.15. AND * when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall finde an asse tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 *Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto

unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an asse, and a colt the foal of an asse.

6 * And the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them,

* Mark 11.4.

7 And brought the asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 * And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the citie was moved, saying, Who is this?

* Mark 11.15. Luke 19.45. John 2.13.

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

* Isaiz 56.7. * Jere. 7.11. Mark 11.17. Luke 19.46.

13 And said unto them, It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer, * but ye have made it a den of theeves.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chiefe priests and scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David, they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea, have ye never read, * Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

* Psal. 8.2.

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the citie, he hungred.

19 * And when he saw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaves onely, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

* Mark 11.13.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away?

21 Jesus answered, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith and doubt not, ye shall not onely do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoever ye shall aske in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

23. ¶ * And

* Mark 11.27. Luke 20.1.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him, as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptisme of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

* Chap. 14.5.

26 But if we shall say, Of men, we fear the people, * for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what think you? A certain man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

* Chap. 3.1.

32 For * John came unto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye believed him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots believed him. And ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

* Isa.5.1 Jer.2.21 Mark 12.1. Luke 20.9.

33 ¶ Hear another parable, There was a certain housholder, * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-presse in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew neer, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants more then the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

* Chap. 26.3. John 11.53.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, * come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40 When

40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, * Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders refused, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. * Psal. 118.22. Act. 4.11

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever * shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder. * Isaiah 8.14.15. Rom. 9.33. 1.pet. 2.7.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The marriage of the Kings son. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 12 The wedding garment.

AND Jesus answered * and spake unto them again by parables, and said, * Luke 14.16. Revel. 19.9.

2 The kingdom of heaven, is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant took his servants, and intreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth, and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the high ways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? and he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkenesse; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

* Chap. 20. 16. 14 * For many are called, but few are chosen.

* Mark 12. 13. Luke 20. 20. 15 ¶ * Then went the Pharisees, and took counsell how they might intangle him in his talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? is it lawfull to give tribute unto Cesar or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him || a peny.

|| In value sevenpence halfpeny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image, and || superscription?

|| Or, inscription

21 They say unto him, Cesars. Then saith he unto them, * Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cesars: and unto God, the things that are Gods.

* Chap. 20. 22. 22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ * The same day came to him the Sadducees, * which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

* Rom. 13. 7. * Mark. 12. 18. 24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

Luke 20. 27. 25 Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

* Acts 23. 8. 26 Likewise the second also and the third, unto the seventh.

* Deut. 25. 5. 27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do erre, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

* Exod. 3. 6. 32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ * But

34 ¶ * But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. * Mark 12.28.
35 Then one of them which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,
36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?
37 Jesus said unto him, * Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde. * Deut. 6.5. Luke 10.27.
38 This is the first and great commandment.
39 And the second is like unto it, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self. * Levit. 19.18.
40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
41 ¶ * While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, * Mark 12.35. Luke 20.41.
42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.
43 He saith unto them, how then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,
44 The LORD said unto my lord, * Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool? * Psal. 110.1.
45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?
46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any more questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 The scribes and the Pharisees good doctrine, but evill example of life. 34 The destruction of Jerusalem.

THen spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.
3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do, but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.
4 * For they binde heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. * Luke 11.46. * Numb. 15.38. Deut. 22.12.
5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: * they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,
6 * And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, * Mark 12.38. Luke 11.43.
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.
8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren. * James 3.1.
9 And call no man your father upon the earth: * for one is your Father which is in heaven. * Mal. 1.6.

10 Neither

10 Neither be ye called maisters: for one is your maister even Christ.
11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.
* Luke 14.11. and 18.14. 12 * And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased, and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.
13 ¶ But * wo unto you scribes and Pharisees hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring to go in.
* Luke 11.52. 14 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees hypocrites; * for ye devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.
* Mark 12.40. Luke 20.47. 15 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compasse sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the childe of hell then your selves.
16 Wo unto you, ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debter.
17 Ye fools, and blinde: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?
18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guiltie.
Or, debter, or, bound
19 Ye fools, and blinde: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?
20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.
21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.
* Luke 11.42. 23 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercie, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.
24 Ye blinde guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.
* Luke 11.39. 25 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.
26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.
27 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beau-

tiful

tifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanneſſe.

28 Even ſo ye alſo outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocriſie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Wo unto you ſcribes and Phariſees, hypocrites; becauſe ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garniſh the ſepulchres of the righteous,

30 And ſay, If we had been in the dayes of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witneſſes unto your ſelves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the meaſure of your fathers.

33 Ye ſerpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye eſcape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I ſend unto you prophets, and wiſe men, and ſcribes; and ſome of them ye ſhall kill and crucifie, and ſome of them ſhall ye ſcourge in your ſynagogues, and perſecute them from citie to citie:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood ſhed upon the earth; * from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, ſon of Barachias, whom ye ſlew between the temple and the altar. * Gene. 4.8.

36 Verily I ſay unto you, All theſe things ſhall come upon this generation.

37 * O Jeruſalem, Jeruſalem, thou that killeſt the prophets, * and ſtoneſt them which are ſent unto thee, how often would * I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not? * Luke 13.34. * 1. Chr. 24.21. * 2. Eſdr. 1.30.

38 Behold, your houſe is left unto you deſolate.

39 For I ſay unto you, Ye ſhall not ſee me henceforth, till ye ſhall ſay, Bleſſed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 The deſtruction of the temple. 29 Of Chriſts coming to judgement.

AND * Jeſus went out, and departed from the temple: and his diſciples came to him for to ſhew him the buildings of the temple. * Mark 13.1.

2 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, See ye not all theſe things? verily I ſay unto you, * There ſhall not be left here one ſtone upon another, that ſhall not be thrown down. * Luke 21.5. * Luke 19.44.

3 ¶ And as he ſat upon the mount of olives, the diſciples came unto him privately, ſaying, Tell us, when ſhall theſe things be? and what ſhall be the ſigne of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.

* Chap. 10.17. Luke 21.12. John 16.2.

9 * Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquitie shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

* Mark 13.14. * Dan. 9.27.

15 * When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by * Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)

16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come down, to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortned, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those dayes shall be shortned.

* Mark 13.21. * Luke 17.23.

23 * Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, believe it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the

the desert, go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers, beleeve it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

28 * For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, * shall the sun be darkned, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appear the signe of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

31 * And he shall send his angels || with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 * Heaven and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

38 * For as in the dayes that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entred into the ark,

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

40 * Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken and the other left.

42 ¶ * Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

43 * But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

45 * Who then is a faithfull and wise servant, whom his

* Luke 17.37. * Isaiah 13.10. Ezek. 32.7. Joel 2. 31. Mark 13.24. *Luke 21.25. * Revel. 1. 7. * 1. Cor. 15.52. 1. Thes. 4.16. ||Or, with a trumpet, and a great voice * Mark 13.31. * Gen. Luke 17 * L 17.3 * Mar 13.35 *Luk 12.3 1. T 5.2 Re 16 *

Lord hath made ruler over his houshold, to give them meat in due season?

46 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evill servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of;

51 And shall ‖ cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

‖ Or, cut him off.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins, 14 and of the talents. 31 The last judgement described.

THen shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:

4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are ‖ gone out.

‖ go- out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

p. 2. rk 33. uke a. r- s

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 ¶ * Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the houre wherein the Son of man cometh.

14 ¶ * For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods:

15 And unto one he gave five ‖ talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his severall ability, and straightway took his journey.

‖ talents

16 Then

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same: and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents, behold, I have gained besides them five talents moe.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull servant, thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithfull servant, thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sowen, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothfull servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 * For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. * Chap. 13.12. Mark 4.25. Luke 8.18.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glorie, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glorie.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the king say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirstie, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

* Isaiah 58.7. Ezek. 18.7.

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirstie, and gave thee drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the king shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, * Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devill and his angels.

* Psal. 6.8. Chap. 7.23.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirstie, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And * these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall

* Dan. 12.2. John 5.29.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the passeover.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

* Mark. 14.1. Luke 22.1. John 13.1. 1 John 11.47.

2 * Ye know that after two dayes is the feast of the passeover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 * Then assembled together the chiefe priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproze among the people.

6 ¶ * Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, * Mark 14.3. John 11.1.

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 * For ye have the poor always with you, but me ye have not always. * Deut. 15.11.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

14 ¶ * Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, * Mark 14.10. Luke 22.3.

15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ * Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passeover? * Mark 14.12. Luke 22.7.

18 And he said, Go into the citie to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passeover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the passeover.

20 * Now when the even was come, he sate down with the twelve. * Mark 14.18. Luke 22.14. John 13.21.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered and said, * He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. * Psal. 41.9.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him, but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man, if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

* 1. Cor. 11. 23, 24.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, * Jesus took bread, and ‖ blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat, this is my body.

‖ Many greek copies have, gave thanks.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.

‖ Or, psalm.

30 And when they had sung an ‖ hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives.

* Mark 14. 27. John 16. 32.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them, * All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, * I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

* Zech. 13. 7.

32 But after I am risen again, * I will go before you into Galilee.

* Mark 14. 28. and 16. 7

33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

* John 13. 38.

34 Jesus said unto him, * Verily I say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee: likewise also said all the disciples.

* Mark 14. 32. Luke 22. 39.

36 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, and very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, If it be possible, let this cup passe from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavie.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, & take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 ¶ And * while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude, with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people. * Mark 14.43. Luke 22.47. John 18.3.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a signe, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail Master, and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: * for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword. * Gen. 9.6.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more then twelve legions of angels? Revel. 13.10.

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, * that thus it must be? * Isaiah 53.10.

55 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves for to take me? I sate daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the * scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. * Lamen. 4.20.

57 ¶ * And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. * Mark 14.53. Luke.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sate with the servants to see the end 22.54. John

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the counsell, sought false witnesse against Jesus to put him to death, 18.13.

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

61 And said, This fellow said, * I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three daies. * John 2.19.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? What is it, which these witnesse against thee? * Chap. 16.27. Rom. 14.10. 1. Thes. 4.16.

63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ the Son of God.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless, I say unto you, * Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting

sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy, what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemie.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, he is guiltie of death.

67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him, and others smote him with || the palms of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ * Now Peter sate without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ is delivered to Pilate. 3 Judas hangeth himself. 30 Christ is crucified.

WHen the morning was come, * all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsell against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 ¶ Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirtie pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, * and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasurie, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counsell, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Where-

* Isaiah 50.6. || Or, rods
* Mark 14.66. Luke 22.55. John 18.25.
* Mark 15.1. Luke 22.66. John 18.28.
* Acts 1.18.

8 Wherefore that field was called, * The field of blood unto this day. * Acts 1.19.

9 ¶ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the prophet, saying, * And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, ‖ whom they of the children of Israel did value: * Zech. 11.13. ‖ Or, whom they bought of the children of Israel.

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.

11 And Jesus stood before the governour; and the governour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 * Now at that feast the governour was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would. * Luke 23.17.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envie they had delivered him.

19 ¶ When he was set down on the judgement seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man; for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

20 * But the chief priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. * John 18.40. Act. 3.14.

21 The governour answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cryed out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. * John 19.1.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 * Then the souldiers of the governour took Jesus into the ‖ common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of souldiers. ‖ Or, governours house.

28 And

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail king of the Jews.

30 And they spit upon him, and took a reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

* Mark 15.21. Luke 23.26. * John 19.17. 32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his crosse.

33 * And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

34 ¶ They gave him vineger to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

* Psal. 22.18. * Psal. 22.8. 36 And sitting down they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head, his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Mat. 27.16, 17, 18. 38 Then were there two theeves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes, save thy self: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others, himself he cannot save: If he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the crosse, and we will beleeve him.

43 * He trusted in God, let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

44 The theeves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cries with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama-sabachthani, that is to say, * My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

* Psal. 22.1. 47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a spunge, * and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. * Psal. 69.21.

49 The

49 The reſt ſaid, Let be, let us ſee whether Elias will come to ſave him.

50 ¶ Jeſus, when he had cried again with a loud voyce, yeelded up the ghoſt.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of ſaints, which ſlept, aroſe,

53 And came out of the graves after his reſurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jeſus, ſaw the earthquake, and thoſe things that were done, they feared greatly, ſaying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding afarre off) which followed Jeſus from Galilee, miniſtring unto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joſes, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 * When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joſeph, who alſo himſelf was Jeſus diſciple: * Mark 15.42. Luke 23.50. John 19.38.

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jeſus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Joſeph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

60 And laid it in his own new tombe, which he had hewen out in the rock: and he rolled a great ſtone to the doore of the ſepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary ſitting over againſt the ſepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chiefe prieſts and Phariſees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver ſaid, while he was yet alive, After three dayes I will riſe again.

64 Command therefore that the ſepulchre be made ſure untill the third day, leſt his diſciples come by night and ſteal him away, and ſay unto the people, he is riſen from the dead: ſo the laſt errour ſhall be worſe then the firſt.

65 Pilate ſaid unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as ſure as you can.

66 So they went and made the ſepulchre ſure, ſealing the ſtone, and ſetting a watch.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to the women, 16 and to the disciples, 19 and sendeth them to teach and baptize.

* Mark 16.11. John 20.1.

IN the * end of the sabbath as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

2 And behold, there ‖ was a great earthquake, for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sate upon it.

‖ Or, had been.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the angel answered, and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsell, they gave large money unto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, his disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governours ears, we will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: And this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me, in heaven and in earth.

* Mark 16.15.

19 ¶ * Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost:

20 Teaching

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to Saint MARK.

CHAP. I.

1 John Baptists office. 9 Jesus baptized, 12 tempted, 14 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others, 23 and cureth many.

THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. * Mal. 3.1.

3 * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. * Isaiah 40.3.

4 * John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptisme of repentance, || for the remission of sins. Luk. 3.4. John 1.23.

5 * And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan confessing their sins. * Matth. 3.1.

6 And John was * clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins: and he did eat locusts and wilde hony, || Or, unto * Matth. 3.5.

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoup down and unloose. * Matth. 3.4.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan. * Matth. 3.13.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens || opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him. ||Or, cloven, or, rent.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And immediatly the spirit driveth him into the wilderness. * Matth. 4.1.

13 And he was there in the wilderness fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the angels ministred unto him.

14 Now

14 Now after that John was put in prison, * Jesus came
* Matth. 4.12. into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,
15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of
God is at hand: repent ye and beleeve the gospel.
* Matth. 4.18. 16 * Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Si-
mon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea:
(for they were fishers.)
17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I
will make you to become fishers of men.
18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed
him.
19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw
James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also
were in the ship mending their nets.
20 And straightway he called them: and they left their
father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went
after him.
* Matth. 4.13. 21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the
sabbath-day he entred into the synagogue, and taught.
* Matth. 7.28. 22 * And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught
them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.
* Luke 4.33. 23 * And there was in their synagogue a man with an un-
clean spirit, and he cryed out,
24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee,
thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I
know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.
25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and
come out of him.
26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried
with a loud voice, he came out of him.
27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they quest-
ioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? What
new doctrine is this? For with authority commandeth he
even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.
28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout
all the region round about Galilee.
* Matth. 8.14. 29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of the syna-
gogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew,
with James and John.
30 But Simons wives mother lay sick of a fever: and
anon they tell him of her.
31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lift her up;
and immediatly the fever left her, and she ministred unto
them.
32 And at even when the sun did set, they brought unto
him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with
devils.
33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.
34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases,
and

and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils (for, to say that they knew him.) to speak, because they knew him.

35 And in the morning rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Matth. 8.2.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And assoon as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimonie unto them.

45 * But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter. * Luke 5.15.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ healeth one sick of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew, and eateth with publicanes and sinners.

AND again * he entred into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noised that he was in the house. * Matth. 9.1.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsie, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for preasse, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

6 But

6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

* Job. 14.4. Isaiah 43.25.

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? * Who can forgive sins but God only?

8 And immediatly when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsie, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsie)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

* Matth. 9.9

14 * And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alpheus, sitting || at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

|| Or, at the place where the custom was received.

15 And it came to passe, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicanes and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicanes and sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

* Matth. 9.14. Luke 5.33.

18 * And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees used to fast, and they come, and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

|| Or, raw, or, unwrought

21 No man also seweth a piece of || new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels, else the new wine doth burst the bottels, and the wine is spilled, and the bottels will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottels.

23 * And

23 * And it came to passe that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day, and his disciples began as they went, to pluck the eares of corn. * Matth. 12.1.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath-day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 The withered hand healed. 13 The twelve apostles chosen.
32 Who are Christs brother, and mother.

AND * he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand. * Matth. 12.9.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawfull to do good on the sabbath-dayes, or to do evill: to save life or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the ‖ hardnesse of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. ‖ Or, blindenesse.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsell with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ‖ preassed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. ‖ Or, rushed.

11 And unclean spirits when they saw him, fell down before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known.

* Matth. 10.1. 13 * And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would, and they came unto him.

14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went || into an house.

|| Or, home.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.

|| Or, kinsmen.

21 And when his || friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himself.

* Matth. 9.34.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, * He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdom be divided against it self, that kingdom cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against it self, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first binde the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

* Matth. 12.31. 28 * Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternall damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

* Matth. 12.46. 31 ¶ * There came then his brethren, and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.
35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 16 Of the seed growing secretly. 30 Of the mustard seed. 36 Christ stilleth the tempest on the sea.

AND * he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land. * Matth. 13.1.
2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,
3 Hearken, behold, there went out a sower to sow:
4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.
5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediatly it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.
6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.
7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yelded no fruit.
8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprang up, and increased, and brought forth some thirtie, and some sixty, and some an hundred.
9 And he said unto them, He that hath eares to hear, let him hear.
10 And when he was alone, they that were about him, with the twelve, asked of him the parable.
11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysterie of the kingdom of God, but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:
12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not understand: lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them. * Matth. 13.14.
13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? And how then will ye know all parables?
14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.
15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediatly, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.
16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stonie ground, who when they have heard the word, immediatly receive it with gladnesse:
17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a

time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word,

* 1. Tim. 6. 17. 19 And the cares of this world, * and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitfull.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirtie fold, some sixtie, and some an hundred.

* Matth. 5. 15. || The word in the original signifieth a lesse measure, as Mat. 5. 15. 21 ¶ * And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a ||bushell, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick?

22 * For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have eares to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: * With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: And unto you that hear shall more be given.

* Matth. 10. 26. 25 * For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

* Matth. 7. 2. 26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

* Matth. 13. 12. 27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

||Or, ripe. 28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her self; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is ||brought forth, immediatly he putteth in the sicle, because the harvest is come.

* Matth. 13. 31. 30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a grain of mustard seed: which when it is sown in the earth, is lesse then all the seeds that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater then all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

* Matth. 13. 34. 33 * And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

* Matth. 8. 23. 35 * And the same day when the even was come, he said unto them, Let us passe over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him, even as he was in the ship: and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And

37 And there arose a great storm of winde, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose and rebuked the winde, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still; and the winde ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearfull? how is it that you have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the winde and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils.
13 They enter into the swine. 35 Jairus his daughter.

AND * they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes. * Matth. 8.28.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could binde him, no not with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afarre off, he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cryed with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choaked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine, fled, and told it in the citie,

and in the countrey. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devill, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devill, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devill, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvell.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

* Matth. 9. 18. 22 * And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of blood twelve yeers,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the presse behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dryed up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediatly knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the presse, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogues house, certain which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the master any further?

36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damosell is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damosell, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damosell was lying.

41 And he took the damosell by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha-Cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damosell (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damosell arose, and walked, for she was of the age of twelve years: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ contemned by his countrey-men. 18 John Baptist is beheaded.

AND * he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his disciples follow him. * Matth. 13.54.

2 And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, but in his own countrey, and among his own kin, and in his own house. * John 4.44.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

* Matth. 9.35. Luke 13.22.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. * And he went round about the villages, teaching.

* Matth. 10.1.

7 ¶ * And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staffe onely: no scrip, no bread, no || money in their purse:

|| The word signifieth a piece of brasse money, in value somwhat lesse then a farthing. Matth. 10.9. but here it is taken in generall for money.

9 But be shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

* Matth. 10.14. * Acts 13.51. James 5.14.

11 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, * shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them: Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, then for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, * and anointed with oyl many that were sick, and healed them.

* Matth. 14.1. * Luke 3.19. * Levit. 18.16.

14 * And king Herod heard of him (For his Name was spread abroad) and he said that John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 * But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth, and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife; for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, * It is not lawfull for thee to have thy brothers wife.

|| Or, an inward grudge.

19 Therefore Herodias had || a quarrell against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

|| Or, kept him, or, spared him.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and || observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth-day made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damosell, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 And

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorry, yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediatly the king sent ‖ an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went and beheaded him in the prison, ‖ Or, one of his guard.

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damosell, and the damosell gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. * Luke 9. 10.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 * And they departed into a desert place by ship privately. * Matth. 14. 13.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 * And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things. * Matth. 14. 15.

35 * And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is farre passed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred ‖ peny-worth of bread, and give them to eat? ‖ The Roman peny is seven pence half penie, as Matth. 18. 28.

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grasse.

40 And they sate down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before || unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediatly he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good chear, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardned.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran thorow that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched || him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples for eating with unwashen hands. 14 Meat defileth not the man.

2 Then * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

3 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with ||defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

4 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands || oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

5 And when they come from the market, except they wash,

with the fist: *Theophylact*, up to the elbow.

they

|| Or, over against Bethsaida.

* Matth. 14. 23.

* Matth. 14. 34.

|| Or, it.

* Matth. 15. 1.

|| Or, common.

|| Or, diligently: *in the original.*

they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have receiued to hold, as the washing of cups and || pots, brasen vessels, and of || tables.

|| Sextarius is about a pinte and an half.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

|| Or, beds.

* Isaiah 29.13. Matth. 15.8.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye || reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

|| Or, frustrate.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

* Matth. 15.5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand.

* Matth. 15.10.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within, out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

* Gene. 6.5. and 8.21.

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciviousnesse, an evill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse:

* Matth. 15.19.

23 All these evill things come from within, and defile the man.

* Matth. 15.21.

24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before || unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediatly he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good chear, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardned.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran thorow that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched || him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples for eating with unwashen hands. 14 Meat defileth not the man.

THen * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with ||defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands || oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash,

[Or, over against Bethsaida.]
[* Matth. 14. 23.]
[Or, it.]
[* Matth. 14. 34.]
[* Matth. 15. 1.]
[Or, common.]
[Or, diligently: or, to the ordinance.]
[with the fist: Theophylact, up to the elbow.]

they

they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and || pots, brasen vessels, and of || tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye || reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within, out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciviousnesse, an evill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse:

23 All these evill things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders

|| Sextarius is about a pint and an half.

|| Or, beds.

* Isaiah 29.13. Matth. 15.8.

|| Or, frustrate.

* Matth. 15.5.

* Matth. 15.10.

* Gene. 6.5. and 8.21.

* Matth. 15.19.

* Marth. 15.21.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.
43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments and of the fishes.
44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.
45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before || unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.
46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.
47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.
48 And he saw them toiling in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.
49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cryed out.
50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediatly he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good chear, it is I, be not afraid.
51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.
52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardned.
53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.
54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,
55 And ran throrow that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.
56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched || him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples for eating with unwashen hands. 14 Meat defileth not the man.

Then * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.
2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with ||defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.
3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands || oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.
4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, with the fist: *Theophylact*, up to the elbow.

they

[Or, over against Bethsaida.] * Matth. 14. 23.
* Matth. 14. 34.
[Or, it.]
* Matth. 15. 1.
[Or, common.]
[Or, diligently: or, to the ordinance.]

they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and || pots, brasen vessels, and of || tables.

|| Sextarius is about a pinte and an half.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

|| Or, beds.

* Isaiah 29.13. Matth. 15.8.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye || reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

|| Or, frustrate.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

* Matth. 15.5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand.

* Matth. 15.10.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within, out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

* Gene. 6.5. and 8.21.

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciviousnesse, an evill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse:

* Matth. 15.19.

23 All these evill things come from within, and defile the man.

* Matth. 15.21.

24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders

bers of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would have no man know it, but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

26 (The woman was a ‖ Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and she besought him that he would cast forth the devill out of her daughter.

‖ Or, Gentile.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said unto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crums.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way, the devill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devill gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the mids of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well, he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feeding the people miraculously; 10 refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees.

IN those dayes * the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

* Matth. 15.32.

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three dayes, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them:

8 So they did eat and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heaven, tempting him. * Matth. 16.1.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a signe? verily I say unto you, There shall no signe be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ * Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loaf. * Matth. 16.5.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod. * Matth. 16.5.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardned?

18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida, and they bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, and led him out of the town, and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he looked up and said, I see men as trees walking.

25 After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ * And

27 ¶ * And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

* Matth. 16.13.

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias, and others, one of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them, * Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

* Matth. 10.38.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 * Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glorie of his Father, with the holy angels.

* Matth. 10.33.

CHAP. IX.

2 Jesus is transfigured. 30 He sheweth his death and resurrection, 33 and giveth divers instructions to his disciples.

* Matth. 16.28.

AND he said unto them, * Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

* Matth. 17.1.

2 ¶ * And after six dayes, Jesus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master it is good for us to be here, and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. * Isaiah 53.24.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them. * Matth. 17.14.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye ‖ with them? ‖ Or, among your selves.

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he ‖ teareth him; and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not. ‖ Or, dasheth him.

19 He answered him and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cryed out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cryed, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, he is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

* Matth. 17.22. 30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and passed thorow Galilee, and would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

* Matth. 18.1. 33 ¶ * And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves by the way?

34 But they held their peace; for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.

35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

* Luke 9.49. 38 ¶ * And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and he followeth not us, and we forbade him, because he followeth not us.

* 1.Cor. 12.3. 39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not, for * there is no man which shall do a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

* Matth. 10.42. 41 * For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my Name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

* Matth. 18.6. 42 * And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that

believe

beleeve in me, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 * And if thy hand ‖ offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 * Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye ‖ offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, and * every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 * Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Have salt in your selves, and have peace one with another.

* Matth. 5.29 and 18.8. ‖ Or, cause thee to offend. * Isaiah 66.24.

‖ Or, cause thee to offend.

* Levit. 2.13. * Matth. 5.13.

CHAP. X.

1 Touching divorcement. 13 Little children brought to Christ. 23 The danger of riches.

AND he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea, by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; & as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife: tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife,

8 And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he saith unto them, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

* Matth. 19.1.

* Matth. 5.32. and 19.9.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

a Matth. 19.13. 13 ¶ * And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

a Matth. 19.16. 17 ¶ * And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternall life?

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is no man good, but one, that is, God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adulterie, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest, go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come, take up the crosse, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

a Matth. 19.27. 28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time,

houſes, and brethren, and ſiſters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with perſecutions; and in the world to come eternall life.

31 * But many that are firſt, ſhall be laſt: and the laſt, firſt. * Matth. 19.30

32 ¶ * And they were in the way going up to Jeruſalem: and Jeſus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things ſhould happen unto him, * Matth. 20.17.

33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem, and the Son of man ſhall be delivered unto the chief prieſts, and unto the ſcribes: and they ſhall condemn him to death, and ſhall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they ſhall mock him, and ſhall ſcourge him, and ſhall ſpit upon him, and ſhall kill him, and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

35 ¶ * And James and John the ſons of Zebedee come unto him, ſaying, Maſter, we would that thou ſhouldeſt do for us whatſoever we ſhall deſire. * Matth. 20.20.

36 And he ſaid unto them, What would ye that I ſhould do for you?

37 They ſaid unto him, Grant unto us, that we may ſit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jeſus ſaid unto them, Ye know not what ye aſk: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptiſme that I am baptized with?

39 And they ſaid unto him, We can. And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Ye ſhall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptiſme that I am baptized withall, ſhall ye be baptized.

40 But to ſit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it ſhall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much diſpleaſed with James and John.

42 But Jeſus called them to him, and ſaith unto them, * Ye know that they which || are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exerciſe lordſhip over them; and their great ones exerciſe authority upon them. * Luke 22.25. || Or, think good.

43 But ſo ſhall it not be among you: but whoſoever will be great among you, ſhall be your miniſter:

44 And whoſoever of you will be the chiefeſt, ſhall be ſervant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be miniſtred unto, but to miniſter, and to give his life a ranſome for many.

46 ¶ * And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of * Matth. 20.29.

Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the high way side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out and say, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercie on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deal, Thou Son of David, have mercie on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath || made thee whole: and immediatly he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

|| Or, saved thee

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem. 12 He curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree.

* Matth. 21. 1. AND * when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you, and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sat, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, & strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

11 And

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 * And seeing a fig-tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet. * Matth. 21.19.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ * And they come to Jerusalem, and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves: * Matth 21.12.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessell thorow the temple.

17 And he taught saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the citie.

20 ¶ * And in the morning as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. * Matth 21.19.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, ‖ Have faith in God. ‖Or. have the faith of God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to passe, he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, * What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. * Matth. 7.7.

25 And when ye stand praying, * forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. * Matth. 6.14.

26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem, * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests and the scribes, and the elders, * Matth. 21.23.

28 And say unto him, By what authoritie doest thou these

Iericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the high way side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out and say, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercie on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercie on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath || made thee whole: and immediatly he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way. || Or, saved thee

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem. 12 He curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree.

* Matth. 21. 1.

AND * when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you, and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sat, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him, and straight way he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the door without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, & strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

11 And

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 * And seeing a fig-tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet. * Matth. 21.19.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ * And they come to Jerusalem, and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves: * Matth 21.12.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessell thorow the temple.

17 And he taught saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ * And in the morning as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. * Matth 21.19.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. ‖Or, have the faith of God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to passe, he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, * What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. * Matth. 7.7.

25 And when ye stand praying, * forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. * Matth. 6.14.

26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem, * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests and the scribes, and the elders, * Matth. 21.23.

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these

things? and who gave this authority to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one || question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. || or, thing.

30 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeve him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard. 13 Touching the paying of tribute, 18 and the resurrection. 41 The poor widow and her two mites.

* Matth. 21.33. AND he began to speak unto them by parables, A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he sent another; and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his wellbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

* Ps. 118.22. 10 * And have ye not read this scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner.

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ * And

13 ¶ * And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.
14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: For thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawfull to give tribute to Cesar, or not?
15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a ||penye, that I may see it.
16 And they brought it; and he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesars.
17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.
18 ¶ * Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying,
19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and leave his wife behinde him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.
20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying, left no seed.
21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.
22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.
23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.
24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?
25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marrie, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven.
26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?
27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly erre.
28 ¶ * And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, & perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?
29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord;
30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

* Matth. 22.15.

||Valuing of our money seven pence halfpenie, as Matt. 18.28.

* Matth. 22.23.

* Matth. 22.35.

21 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandment greater then these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt-offerings, and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

35 ¶ * And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the Son of David?

* Matth. 22.41.

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his son? and the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, * Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places.

* Matth. 23.5.

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:

* Matth. 23.14.

40 * Which devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

* Luke 21.1.

41 ¶ * And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast ‖ money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much.

‖ A piece of brasse monev. See Mat. 10.9

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two ‖ mites, which make a farthing.

‖ It is the seventh part of one piece of that brasse money.

43 And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasury.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The destruction of the temple. 9 Persecution for the gospel. 14 Great calamities of the Jews. 24 Christs coming to judgement.

* Matth. 24.1.

AND * as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down.

3 And

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,

4 * Tell us when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be, but the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earth-quakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of || sorrows.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to councels, and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 * But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate; but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye; for it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 ¶ * But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains.

15 And let him that is on the house top, not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortned those dayes, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortned the dayes.

21 * And

* Matth. 24. 3.

|| The word in the original importeth the pains of a woman in travell.

* Matth. 10. 19.

* Matth. 24. 15.

* Matth. 24.23. 21 * And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, he is there: beleeve him not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

* Matth. 24.29. 24 ¶ * But in those dayes, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light.

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven, shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four windes, from the uttermost part of the earth, to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree, When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is neer;

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, know that it is nigh, even at the doors.

30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

* Matth. 24.42. 33 * Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authoritie to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch

35 Watch ye therefore (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 A conspiracie against Christ. 3 A woman poureth ointment on his head. 10 Judas selleth him: 43 Betrayeth him. 66 Peter thrice denieth him.

* Matth. 26.2. AFter * two dayes was the feast of the passeover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

2 ¶ * And

3 ¶ * And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster box of ointment of || spikenard, very precious, and she brake the box, and poured it on his head. * Matth. 26. 6. ||Or, pure nard, or liquid nard.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For it might have been sold for more then three hundred || pence, and have been given to the poor: and they murmured against her. || See Matth. 18. 28.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble you her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poor with you alwayes, and whensoever ye will, ye may do them good: but me ye have not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospell shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 ¶ * And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them. * Matth. 26. 14.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ * And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passeover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passeover? * Matth. 26. 17. ||Or, sacrificed.

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 * And as they sat, and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me, shall betray me. * Matth. 26. 20.

19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him, one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been born.

22 ¶ * And

* Matth. 26.26. 22 ¶ * And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my bodie.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an ‖ hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

‖ Or, psalme.

27 * And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended * Matth. 26.31. because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

* Matth. 26.33. 29 * But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this day, even in this night before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

* Matth. 26.36. 32 * And they came to a place which was named Gethsemani, and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavie,

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the hour might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again (for their eyes were heavie) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep

Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ * And immediatly, while he yet spake, cometh Judas one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders. * Matth. 26.47.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And assoon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and with staves to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body, and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ * And they led Jesus away to the high priest, and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes. * Matth. 26.57.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

55 * And the chief priests, and all the counsell sought for witnesse against Jesus to put him to death, and found none. * Matth. 26.59.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certain, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesse agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the mids, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high

high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the blessed?

* Matth. 24.30. 62 And Jesus said, I am: * and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

* Matth. 26.69. 66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denyed, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cock crew.

69 And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

* Matth. 26.73. 70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

[Or, he wept abundantly, or, he began to weep.] 71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 * And the second time the cock crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, ‖ he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Jesus brought bound and accused before Pilate, 15 is delivered to be crucified, 27 hanged between two theeves, 43 and is honourably buried.

* Matth. 27.1. AND * straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole councell, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

* Matth. 27.13. 4 * And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envie)

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews?

13 And they cryed out again, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evill hath he done? And they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Prætorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 *And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his crosse. * Matth. 27. 32.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scull.

23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucifie two theeves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, *And he was numbred with the transgressours. * Isaiah 53. 12.

29 And

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Save thy self, and come down from the crosse.

31 Likewise also the chief priests, mocking, said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save:

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the crosse, that we may see and beleeve: and they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darknesse over the whole land untill the ninth hour.

* Matth. 27.45. 34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone, let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on afar off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the lesse, and of Joses, and Salome;

* Luke 8.3. 41 (Who also when he was in Galilee, * followed him, and ministred unto him, and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

* Matth. 27.57. 42 ¶ * And now when the even was come, (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counseller, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead, and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him, whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewen out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 Sendeth forth his disciples, 19 and ascendeth into heaven.

AND when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 *And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun. * Luke 24.1. John 20.1.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 *And entring into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted. * John 20.11.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here, behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tel his disciples and Peter that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, *as he said unto you. * Matth. 26.32.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, *he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, *out of whom he had cast seven devils. * John 20.14. * Luke 8.2.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not. * Luke 24.13.

12 ¶ After that he appeared in another form *unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey. * Luke 24.36.

13 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them. John 20.19.

14 ¶ *Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at ‖ meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardnesse of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen. (Or, together.) * Matth. 28.19.

15 *And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature. * John 12.48.

16 He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; *but he that believeth not, shall be damned. * Acts 16.18.

17 And these signes shall follow them that believe; *In my Name shall they cast out devils, *they shall speak with new tongues, * Acts 2.4.

18 *They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly * Acts 28.5.

ly thing it shall not hurt them, * they shall lay hands on the sick and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was * receiued vp into heauen, and sat on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached euery where, the Lord working with them, and * confirming the word with signes following. Amen.

* Acts 28.8.
* Luke 24.51.
* Hebr. 2.4.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to Saint LUKE.

CHAP. I.

1 Lukes preface. 5 The conception of John Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 57 The nativitie and circumcision of John.

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeued among us,

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, hauing had perfect vnderstanding of all things from the very first, to write vnto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certaintie of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herod the king of Iudea a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blamelesse.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elizabeth was barren; and they both were now well stricken in yeers.

8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custom of the priests office, his lot was to burn incense, when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared vnto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

* Exod. 30.7. Levit. 16.17.

13 But

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladnesse, and many shall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink, and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his mothers womb.

16 * And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. * Mal. 4.6.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient || to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. || Or, by.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in yeers.

19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them, and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckned unto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that assoon as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid her self five moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth, the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David, and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art highly ||favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. || Or, graciously accepted, or, much graced. See ver. 30.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

31 * And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and
* Isaiah. bring forth a Son, and shalt call his Name Jesus.
7.14. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the
Matth. Highest, and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of
1.21. his father David.
33 * And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever,
* Daniel and of his kingdom there shall be no end.
7.14. 34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be,
Mich. seeing I know not a man?
4.7. 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The holy
Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest
shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which
shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.
36 And behold thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also con-
ceived a son in her old age, and this is the sixth moneth with
her, who was called barren.
37 For with God nothing shall be unpossible.
38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be-
it unto me according to thy word: and the angel departed
from her.
39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the
hill-country with haste, into a city of Juda,
40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted
Elizabeth.
41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the sa-
lutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Eliza-
beth was filled with the holy Ghost.
42 And she spake out with a loud voice and said, Blest
art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy
womb.
43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord
should come to me?
44 For lo, assoon as the voyce of thy salutation sounded
in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.
45 And blessed is she || that beleeved, for there shall be a per-
formance of those things which were told her from the Lord.
|| Or, which beleeved that there.
46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord,
47 And my spirit hath rejoyced in God my Saviour.
48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaid-
en: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me
blessed.
49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things,
and holy is his Name.
50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from genera-
* Isaiah tion to generation.
51.9. 51 * He hath shewed strength with his arm, * he hath
* Psal. scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.
33.10. 52 * He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and
* 1 Sam. exalted them of low degree.
2.6.

53 * He

53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away. * Psal. 34.10.

54 He hath holpen his seruant Israel, * in remembrance of his mercy, * Jer. 31. 3.20.

55 * As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed for ever. * Gene. 17.19.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her own house. Psal. 132.11.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that she should be deliuered, and she brought forth a son.

58 And her neighbours & her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, & they reioyced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered and said, Not so, but he shal be called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father how he would haue him called.

63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn: and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these ||sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill countrey of Iudea. ||Or, things.

66 And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of childe shall this be? and the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

69 * And hath raised up an horn of saluation for us, in the house of his seruant Dauid; * Psal. 132.17.

70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which haue been since the world began. * Jere. 23.6. and 30.10.

71 That we should be saued from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.

72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy couenant:

73 * The oath which he sware to our father Abraham, * Gene. 22.16.

74 That he would grant vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of y hands of our enemies, might serue him without fear

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the prophet of the Highest

for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his
‖Or. for wayes,
‖Or. bowels 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, ‖by
el. of the the remission of their sins,
mercy. 78 Through the ‖tender mercy of our God; whereby the
‖Or. sun- ‖day-spring from on high hath visited us,
rising. Or. 79 To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the
branch. shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.
Numb. 80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and
24.17. was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.
Isa.11.1. Zech.3.8 CHAP. II.
Mal.4.2. 1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane empire. 6 Christs nativitie.
21 His circumcision. 28 and 29 Simeon and Anna prophesie
of Christ.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar augustus, that all the world should be ‖taxed.
‖Or. enrolled. 2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria.)
3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own citie.
4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the citie of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the citie of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and
¶ John 7.42. lineage of David)
5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.
6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be delivered.
7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inne.
8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping ‖watch over their flock by night.
‖Or. the night watches. 9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glorie of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.
10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shalbe to all people.
11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
12 And this shall be a signe unto you, Ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.
13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying,
14 Glorie to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.
15 And it came to passe as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us
now

now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made known unto us.
16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Ioseph, and the babe lying in a manger.
17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this childe.
18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.
19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondred them in her heart.
20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.
21 * And when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called * IESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb. * Gene. 17.12. * Matth. 1.21.
22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord,
23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, * Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord) * Exod. 13.2.
24 And to offer a sacrifice according to * that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons. * Numb. 18.15. * Levit. 12.2,6.
25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was just & devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: & the holy Ghost was upon him.
26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.
27 And he came by the Spirit into the temple, and when the parents brought in the childe Jesus to do for him after the custome of the law,
28 Then took he him up in his armes, and blessed God, and said,
29 Lord, now lettest thou thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word.
30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation:
31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people:
32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.
33 And Ioseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.
34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this childe is set for the * fall and rising again of many in Israel, and for a signe which shall be spoken against: * Isai. 8.14.
45 (Yea, a sword shall pierce thorow thy own soul also) Rom. 9.33.
that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.
36 And there was one Anna a prophetesse, the daughter of

Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, he was of a great age, and had liued with an husband seuen yeers from her virginitie:

37 And she was a widow of about fourescore and four yeers: which departed not from the temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she coming in that instant, gaue thanks likewise vnto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in ‖ Jerusalem.

‖ Or, Israel.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was vpon him.

* Deut. 16.1.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem * euery yeer at the feast of the passeouer.

42 And when he was twelue yeers old, they went vp to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the childe Jesus tarried behinde in Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue been in the company, went a dayes journey, and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctours, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his vnderstanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said vnto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? behold, thy father and I haue sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Fathers businesse?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying which he spake vnto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and ‖ stature, and in fauour with God and man.

‖ Or, age.

CHAP. III.

1 Johns preaching and baptisme. 15 His testimony of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth him. 21 Christ is baptized. 23 His genealogie.

NOw in the fifteenth yeer of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Judea, and

Herod

Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sins,

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, *The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough wayes shall be made smooth,

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, *O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‖ worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, *He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none: and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also Publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, ‖ Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsly; and be content with your ‖ wages.

15 And as the people were ‖ in expectation, and all men ‖ mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not:

16 John answered, saying unto them all, *I indeed baptize you with water, but one mightier then I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire:

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaffe he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 *But

* Matth. 3.1.

* Isai. 40.3.

* Matth. 3.7.

‖ Or, meet for.

* James 2.15. 1 John 3.17.

‖ Or, put no man in fear. ‖ Or, allowance. ‖ Or, in suspence. ‖ Or, reasoned, or, debated.

* Matth. 3.11.

19 *But Herod the tetrarch being reproved by him for Herodias for his brother Philips wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to passe that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty yeers of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli,

24 Which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph,

25 Which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Naum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son of Nagge,

26 Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda,

27 Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri,

28 Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er,

29 Which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,

30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,

31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,

32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson,

33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Elrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,

34 Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara which was the son of Nachor,

35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,

36 Which

* Matth. 14. 3.

* Matth. 3. 13.

36 Which was the ſon of Cainan, which was the ſon of Arphaxed, which was the ſon of Sem, which was the ſon of Noe, which was the ſon of Lamech,

37 Which was the ſon of Mathuſala, which was the ſon ſon of Enoch, which was the ſon of Jared, which was the ſon of Maleleel, which was the ſon of Cainan,

38 Which was the ſon of Enos, which was the ſon of Seth, which was the ſon of Adam, which was the ſon of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Chriſts temptation and faſting. 13 He overcometh the devill, 14 beginneth to preach. 16 They at Nazareth admire him.

AND * Jeſus being full of the holy Ghoſt returned from Jordan, and was led by the ſpirit into the wilderneſſe, * Matth. 4. 1.

2 Being fourtie dayes tempted of the devill, and in thoſe dayes he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil ſaid unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this ſtone that it be made bread.

4 And Jeſus anſwered him, ſaying, It is written, That man ſhall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devill taking him up into an high mountain, ſhewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devill ſaid unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glorie of them; for that is delivered unto me, and to whomſoever I will, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worſhip me: all ſhall be thine.

8 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Get thee behinde me Satan; for it is written, Thou ſhalt worſhip the Lord thy God, and him onely ſhalt thou ſerve.

‖Or, fall down before me.

9 And he brought him to Jeruſalem, and ſet him on a pinacle of the temple, and ſaid unto him, If thou be the Son of God, caſt thy ſelf down from hence:

10 For it is written, He ſhall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee.

11 And in their hands they ſhall bear thee up, leſt at any time thou daſh thy foot againſt a ſtone.

12 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto him, It is ſaid, Thou ſhalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devill had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a ſeaſon.

14 ¶ And Jeſus returned in the power of the ſpirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him thorow all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their ſynagogues, being glorified of all.

* Matth. 13. 54.

16 ¶ And he came to * Nazareth, where he had been brought

brought up, and as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

*Esaiah 61.1. 18 *The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blinde, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable yeer of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the ministers, and sat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son?

23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this prouerb, Physitian, heal thy self: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in the countrey.

* Matth. 13.57. 24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No * prophet is accepted in his own countrey.

* 1. King 17.9. 25 But I tell you of a truth, * many widows were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three yeers and six moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land.

26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

* 2. King 5.14. 27 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet, and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the || brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him down headlong.

Or, edge.

30 But he passing through the midst of them went his way,

31 And came down to Capernaum a citie of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath dayes.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: * for his word was with power.

* Matth. 7.29.

33 ¶ * And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devill, and cryed out with a loud voice,

* Mark. 1.23.

34 Saying, || Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

Or, away.

35 And

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not.
36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.
37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.
38 ¶ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever, and they besought him for her. * Matth. 8.14.
39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministred unto them.
40 ¶ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them and healed them.
41 * And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not || to speak: for they knew that he was Christ. * Mark 1.34. ‖ Or, to say that they knew him to be Christ.
42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place, and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.
43 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.
44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

2 Christ teacheth out of the ship. 4 A miraculous draught of fishes. 12 The leper cleansed. 18 The palsie is healed. 27 Matthew called.

AND * it came to passe, that as the people pressed upon him to heare the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genelareth. * Matth. 4.18.
2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.
3 And he entred into one of the ships which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land, and he sat down and taught the people out of the ship.
4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.
5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.
6 And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake.

7 And

7 And they beckned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken:

10 And so was also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

12 ¶ * And it came to passe, when he was in a certain citie, behold, a man full of leprosie; who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Matth. 8.2.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean; and immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go and shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimonie unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, and doctours of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Jewes, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

18 ¶ * And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him. * Matth. 9.2.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the house top, and let him down through the tiling with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power

power upon earth to forgive sins (he said unto the sick of the palsie) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

27 ¶ * And after these things he went forth, and saw a publicane named Levi, sitting at the receit of custome: and he said unto him, Follow me. * Matth. 9.9.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicanes and of others that sat down with them.

30 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and sinners?

31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said unto him, * Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees, but thine eat and drink? * Matth. 9.14.

34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, & then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Touching the ears of corn that were plucked by the disciples on the sabbath. 12 Christ chuseth the twelve. 17 He healeth, 20 and preacheth.

AND it * came to passe on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields: & his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands. * Matth. 12.1.

2 And

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawfull to do on the sabbath-dayes?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eat but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 * And it came to passe also on another sabbath, that he entred into the synagogue and taught, and there was a man whose right hand was withered. * Matth. 12.9.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day: that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing, Is it lawfull on the sabbath-dayes to do good, or to do evill: to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand: and he did so, and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day he called unto him his disciples: * and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named apostles: * Matth. 10.1.

14 Simon (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew.

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas * the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour. * Jude 1

17 ¶ And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said,

fam, * Blessed be ye poor; for yours is the kingdom of God. * Matth.
21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. 5.3.
Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.
22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, & shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of mans sake.
23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.
24 * But woe unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation. * Amos. 6.1.
25 * Woe unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep. * Isaiah 65.13.
26 Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you; for so did their fathers to the false prophets.
27 ¶ * But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you. * Matth. 5.44.
28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.
29 * And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coat also. * Matth. 5.39. * 1.Cor. 6.7.
30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.
31 * And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. * Matth. 7.12. Tob. 4.15.
32 * For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye: for sinners also love those that love them.
33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. * Matth. 5.46.
34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners to receive as much again. * Matth. 5.42.
35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kinde unto the unthankfull, and to the evill.
36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull. * Matth. 7.1.
37 * Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven. * Matth. 15.14.
38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again. * Matth. 10.24. Or, shall be perfected as his master.
39 And he spake a parable unto them, * Can the blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch?
40 * The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.

* Matth. 7.3. 41 * And why beholdest thou ỳ mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

42 Either, how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thy self beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, & then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote ỳ is in thy brothers eye.

* Matth. 7.16. 43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good, and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

* Matth. 7.21. 46 ¶ * And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock, and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediatly it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 The centurions faith: 10 Christ healeth his servant being absent, 11 raiseth the widows son. 24 Christs testimony of John.

* Matth. 8.5. NOw when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, * he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurions servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy for whom he should do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me souldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Naim: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the onely son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the ‖ bier, (and they that bare him stood still) and he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. ‖ Or, coffin.

15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 * And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things. * Matth. 11.2.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

21 And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evill spirits, and unto many that were blinde he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea I say unto you, and much more then a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet then John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicanes, justified God, being baptized with the baptisme of John.

‖Or, frustrated. ‖Or, within themselves.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers ‖ rejected the counsell of God ‖ against themselves, being not baptized of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, * Wherunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

* Matth. 11.16.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The son of man is come eating, and drinking, and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.

* Mark. 14.3.

36 ¶ * And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feet with teares, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee, which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman this is, that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditour, which had two debtors: the one ought five hundred ‖ pence, and the other fifty.

‖ See Matth. 18.28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most.

43 Simon

44 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet; but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kisse: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee, go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Women minister unto Christ. 5 The parable of the sower, and of the candle. 26 The legion of devils.

AND it came to passe afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching, and shewing glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him.

2 And certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, * Mark 16.9.

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others which ministred unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: * Matth. 13.2.

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock, and assoon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he had said these things, he cryed, He that hath eares to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him saying, what might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to others in parables, that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand. * Matth. 13.18.

11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that hear: then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should beleeve and be saved.

13 They on the rock, are they, which when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while beleeve, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns, are they which when they have heard, go forth, and are choaked with cares and riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

* Matth. 5.15. 16 ¶ * No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessell, or putteth it under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

* Matth. 10.26. 17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad.

* Matth. 13.12. 18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: * for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he ‖ seemeth to have.

‖ Or, thinketh that he hath.

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the presse.

20 And it was told him by certain, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

* Matth. 12.46. 21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

* Matth. 8.23. 22 ¶ * Now it came to passe on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake, and they launched forth.

23 But as they sayled, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardie.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water, and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondred, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the windes and water, and they obey him.

* Matth. 8.28. 26 ¶ * And they arrived at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombes.

28 When he saw Jesus, he cryed out, and fell down before him, & with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus

Jesus thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters, and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devill into the wildernesse)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name. And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them: and he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them: for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him, but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole citie, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ * And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the Synagogue, and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house: * Matth. 9.18.

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelve yeers of age, and she lay a dying. ¶ But as he went, the people throonged him.

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve yeers, which had spent all her living upon physitians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master the multitude throng thee, and preasse thee, and saiest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace.)

49 ¶ Whyle he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not, beleeve only, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not: she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth out apostles. 7 Herod is desirous to see Christ. 28 The transfiguration. 37 The lunatick.

9 Matth. 10.1. Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats a piece.

4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimonie against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ Now

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead: * Matth. 14.1.

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. * And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place belonging to the citie called Bethsaida. * Matth. 14.13.

11 And the people, when they knew it, followed him; and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 * And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place. * Matth. 14.15.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

18 ¶ * And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? * Matth. 16.13.

19 They answering said, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing,

22 Saying, * The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day. * Matth. 17.22.

23 ¶ * And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse daily, and follow me. * Matth. 10.38.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 * For

25 * For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

* Matth. 16.26. Mark 8.36.

26 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Fathers, and of the holy angels.

* Matth. 10.33.

27 * But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here which shall not taste of death, till they see ‖ kingdom of God.

* Matth. 16.28. ‖ Or, things.

28 ¶ And it came to passe about an eight dayes after these ‖ sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heavie with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them, and they feared as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seen.

* Matth. 17.14.

37 ¶ And it came to passe that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee look upon my son, for he is my only childe.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him, that he foameth again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithlesse, and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devill threw him down and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the uncleane spirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him again to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred every one at all

things

things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,
44 *Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men. * Matth. 17.22.
45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.
46 ¶ *Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. * Matth. 18.1.
47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart, took a childe, and set him by him, Mark 9.34.
48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this childe in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.
49 ¶ *And John answered, and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. * Mark 9.38.
50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us, is for us.
51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,
52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went, and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.
53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.
54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as *Elias did? *2 Kings 1.10.
55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.
56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.
57 ¶ *And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. * Matth. 8.19.
58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.
59 *And he said unto another, Follow me: but he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. * Matth. 8.21.
60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.
61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house.
62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand

to

to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

1 The seventie disciples: 17 admonished to be humble. 14 Martha reprehended.

After * these things the Lord appointed other seventie also, and sent them two and two before his face into every citie and place, whither he himself would come.

* Matth. 9.37.

2 Therefore said he unto them, * The harvest truely is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

* Matth. 10.16.

3 Go your wayes: * behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

* Matth. 10.11.

5 * And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your wayes out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

* Matth. 11.21.

13 * Woe unto thee Chorazin, woe unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement than for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

* Matth. 10.40.

16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seventie returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy Name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

19 Behold,

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoyce not that the spirits are subject unto you: but rather rejoyce because your names are written in heaven.

21 ¶ In that hour Jesus rejoyced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 || All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

|| Many ancient copies adde these words. *And turning to his disciples he said.*

23 ¶ And he turned him unto his disciples, and said privately, *Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many prophets & kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, *Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind, and thy neighbour as thy self.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

29 But he willing to justifie himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among theeves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyl and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inne, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two || pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

|| See Matth. 20. 2.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the theeves?

37 And he said, he that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly. 14 He casteth out a dumb devill. 29 He preacheth unto the people, 37 and reproveth the Pharisees and lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done as in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us ‖ day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evill.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine ‖ in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him:

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not, the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed, I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise, and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 * And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde: knock and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 * If a son shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he aske a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

Matth. 6.9.

‖ Or, for the day.

‖ Or, out of his way.

* Matth. 7.7.

* Matth. 7.9.

12 Or if he shall ask an egge, will he offer him a scorpion?
13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?
14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to passe when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake: and the people wondred.
15 But some of them said, *He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils. * Matth. 9.34. and 12.24.
16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heaven.
17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it selfe is brought to desolation: and a house divided against a house, falleth.
18 If Satan also be divided against himselfe, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say, that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.
19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.
20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom is come upon you.
21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.
22 But when a stronger then he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.
23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.
24 *When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. * Matth. 12.43.
25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.
26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.
27 ¶ And it came to passe as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.
28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it.
29 ¶ *And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation, they seek a signe, and there shall no signe be given it, but the signe of Jonas the prophet. * Matth. 12.38.
30 For as Jonas was a signe unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.
31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the theeves?
37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.
38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house.
39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.
40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.
41 And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:
42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly. 14 He casteth out a dumb devill. 29 He preacheth unto the people, 37 and reproveth the Pharisees and lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.
2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done as in heaven, so in earth.
3 Give us ‖ day by day our daily bread.
4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evill.
5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;
6 For a friend of mine ‖ in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him:
7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not, the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed, I cannot rise and give thee.
8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise, and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.
9 * And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shalbe opened unto you.
10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.
11 * If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

Matth. 6.9.

‖ Or, for the day.

‖ Or, out of his way.

* Matth. 7.7.

* Matth. 7.9.

12 Or if he shall ask an egge, will he offer him a scorpion?
13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?
14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to passe when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake: and the people wondred.
15 But some of them said, * He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils. * Matth. 9.34. and 12.24.
16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heaven.
17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it selfe is brought to desolation: and a house divided against a house, falleth.
18 If Satan also be divided against himselfe, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say, that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.
19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.
20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.
21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.
22 But when a stronger then he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.
23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.
24 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. * Matth. 12.43.
25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.
26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.
27 ¶ And it came to passe as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.
28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it.
29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation, they seek a signe, and there shall no signe be given it, but the signe of Jonas the prophet. * Matth. 12.38.
30 For as Jonas was a signe unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.
31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came

came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon: and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; & behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

33 * No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under || a bushel: but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkenesse.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkenesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marveiled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 * And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of ravening and wickednesse.

40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather give alms || of such things as you have: and behold, all things are clean unto you.

42 But wo unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint, and rue, and all manner of herbs, and passe over judgement and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

43 * Wo unto you Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also.

46 * And he said, Wo unto you also ye lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be born, and ye your selves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

47 * Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truly ye bear witnesse that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That

* Matth. 5.15.
|| See Matth. 5.15.
* Matth. 6.22.
* Matth. 23.25.
||Or, as you are able.
* Matth. 23.6.
* Matth. 23.4.
* Matth. 23.29.

50 That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation.

51 * From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. * Gen. 4.8.

52 * Woe unto you lawyers: for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selves, and them that were entring in, ye ‖ hindred. * Matth. 23.13. ‖ Or, forbad.

53 And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things,

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 To avoid hypocrisie and fearfulnesse in publishing Christs doctrine. 13 To beware of covetousnesse. 42 The faithfull and wise steward.

IN the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie. * Matth. 16.6. * Matth. 10.26.

2 * For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darknesse, shall be heard in the light, and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house tops.

4 * And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do. * Matth. 10.28.

5 But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two ‖ farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? ‖ See Matth. 10.29.

7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

8 * Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confesse me before men, him shall the Son of man also confesse before the angels of God. * Matth. 10.32. 2. Tim. 2.12.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. * Matth. 10.19.

11 * And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates,

magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed and beware of covetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do, I will pull down my barns, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many yeers, take thine ease, eat, drink, & be merry.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night is thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

Or. do they require thy soul.

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, * Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, neither for the body what ye shall put on.

** Matth. 6.25.*

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the ravens, for they neither sow nor reap, which neither have storehouse nor barn, and God feedeth them. How much more are ye better then the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow, they toil not, they spin not: and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtfull minde.

Or. live not in carefull suspence.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth ye have need of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you.

32 Fear not little flock; for it is your Fathers good plea-
sure to give you the kingdom.
33 Sell that ye have, and give alms: * provide your selves * Matth.
bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that fail- 6.20.
eth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.
34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.
35 * Let your loyns be girded about, & your lights burning. * 1 Pet.
36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their 1.13.
Lord, when he will return from the wedding: that when he
cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediatly.
37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he
cometh shall finde watching: verily I say unto you, that he
shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and
will come forth and serve them.
38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the
third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those servants.
39 * And this know, that if the goodman of the house had * Matth.
known what hour the thief would come, he would have 24.43.
watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken
thorow.
40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man com-
eth at an hour when ye think not.
41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this
parable unto us, or even to all?
42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise
steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his houshold,
to give them their portion of meat in due season?
43 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he com-
eth shall finde so doing.
44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ru-
ler over all that he hath.
45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord de-
layeth his coming, and shall begin to beat the men-servants,
and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken:
46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he
looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not ware, and
will ‖ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion ‖ Or, cut
with the unbelievers. him off.
47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and pre-
pared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be
beaten with many stripes.
48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of
stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomso-
ever much is given, of him shall be much required, & to whom
men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.
49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will
I, if it be already kindled?
50 But I have a baptisme to be baptized with, and how ‖ Or,
am I ‖ straitned till it be accomplished? pained.

51 * Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division.

* Matth. 10.34.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And he said also to the people, * When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower, and so it is.

* Matth. 16.2.

55 And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat, and it cometh to pass.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your selves judge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ * When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

* Matth. 5.25.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence till thou hast paid the very last ‖ mite.

‖ See Mark 12.42.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans and others. 6 The fig-tree cursed. 24 The strait gate.

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay, but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloe fell, and slew them, think ye that they were ‖ sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

‖ Or, debtors.

5 I tell you nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And

9 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eighteen yeers, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmitie.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six dayes in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen yeers, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ * Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and wherewnto shall I resemble it? * Matth. 13.31.

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree, and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Wherewnto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three || measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. || Ga. Matth.

22 * And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem. * Matth. 13.33.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, * Matth. 9.35.

24 ¶ * Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. * Matth. 17.13.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, & hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are, depart from me all ye workers of iniquitie. * Matth. 7.23.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye

shall see Abraham, and Isaac and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you your selves thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

* Matth. 19.30. 30 * And behold, there are last, which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

* Matth. 23.37. 34 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, until [illegible] come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The dropsie healed on the sabbath. 7 The parable of the great supper. 25 Who cannot be Christs disciples.

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees, to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him go:

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an asse or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms, saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him:

9 And he that bade thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

10 * But

10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room, that when he that bade thee, cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. * Prov. 25.6.7.

11 * For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted. * Matth. 23. 12.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the * poor, the maimed, the lame, the blinde: * Tob. 4.7.

14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompence thee, for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, * Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. * Rev. 19.9.

16 * Then he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many, * Matth. 22.2.

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must go and seek it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said: I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, & the blinde.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the high ways and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. * Matth. 10.37.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him,
30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.
31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand, to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?
32 Or else while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.
33 So likewise whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.
34 ¶ Salt is good, but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?
35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill, but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

* Matth. 5.13.

CHAP. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheep: 8 of the piece of silver: 11 of the prodigall son.

THen drew neer unto him all the Publicanes and sinners for to hear him.
2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, this man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.
3 ¶ And he spake this parable unto them, saying,
4 What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninetie and nine in the wildernesse, and go after that which is lost, until he finde it?
5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders rejoycing.
6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.
7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.
8 ¶ Either what woman having ten ‖ pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she finde it?
9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost.
10 Likewise I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.
11 ¶ And he said, A certain man had two sons:
12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.
13 And not many dayes after, the younger son gathered all together,

* Matth. 18.12.
‖ Drachma, here translated a piece of silver, is the eighth part of an ounce, which cometh to seven half-pence, & is equal to the Roman peny, Mat. 18.28.

together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joyned himself to a citizen of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat and be merry:

24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29 And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends.

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad, for this thy brother was dead, and is live again; and was lost, and is found.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

a The parable of the unjust steward. 14 The hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees reproved.

AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do: for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So he called every one of his lords debters unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?

6 And he said, An hundred ‖ measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.

‖ The word Batus in the original, containeth nine gallons three quarts.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred ‖ measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore.

‖ The word here interpreted a measure, in the original containeth about fourteen bushels and a pottle.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the ‖ mammon of unrighteousnesse, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithfull in the unrighteous ‖ mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye have not been faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 ✠ No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will hold to the one and despise the other: ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justifie your selves before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 * The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

17 * And it is easier for heaven and earth to passe, then one tittle of the law to fall.

18 * Whose

18 * Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery. * Matth. 5.32.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple, and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certain begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich mans table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried:

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cryed, and said, Father Abraham have mercie on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, Remember, that thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, & likewise Lazarus evill things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to us that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren; that he may testifie unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 To avoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgive another. 6 The power of faith. 12 The ten lepers.

THen said he unto the disciples, * It is impossible but that offences will come, but woe unto him through whom they come. * Matth. 18.7.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selves: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgive him. * Matth. 18.21.

4 And if he trespasse against thee seven times in a day, and seven

seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 * And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea, and it should obey you.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eat and drink.

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants, we have done that which was our dutie to do.

11 ¶ And it came to passe as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed thorow the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up their voices and said, Jesus Master, have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, * Go shew your selves unto the priests. And it came to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God;

16 And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come; he answered them, and said, The kingdom of God cometh not || with observation.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdom of God is || within you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The dayes will come when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See here, or lo there: go not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one part under

* Mark 17.20.

* Levit. 14.2.

|| Or, with outward shew. || Or, among you.

* March 24.23.

under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it be also in the dayes of the Son of man. * Gen. 7.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entred into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all:

28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded: * Gen. 19.

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all:

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house top, & his stuffe in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 * Remember Lots wife. * Gen. 19.26.

33 * Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. * Matth. 16.25.

34 * I tell you, In that night there shall be two men in one bed: the one shall be taken, the other shall be left. *Matth. 24.40.

35 Two women shall be grinding together, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 ||Two men shall be in the field: the one shall be taken, and the other left. ||This 36 verse is wanting in most of the Greek copies.

37 And they answered and said unto him, *Where, Lord. And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together. * Matth. 24.28.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 The importunate widow. 9 The Pharisee and publicane. 15 Children brought to Christ. 22 All to be left for Christs sake.

AND he spake a parable unto them, to this end, that men ought * alwayes to pray and not to faint, * 1. Thes. 5.17.

2 Saying, There was in a citie a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continuall coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Neuertheleſſe, when the Son of man cometh, ſhall he finde faith on the earth?

9 And he ſpake this parable vnto certain which truſted in themſelues || that they were righteous, and deſpiſed others:

Or, as being righteous.

10 Two men went vp into the temple to pray, the one a Phariſee, and the other a publicane.

11 The Phariſee ſtood and prayed thus with himſelf, God I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniuſt, adulterers, or euen as this publicane.

12 I faſt twice in the week, I giue tithes of all that I poſſeſſe.

13 And the publicane ſtanding afar off, would not lift vp ſo much as his eyes vnto heauen, but ſmote vpon his breaſt, ſaying, God be mercifull to me a ſinner.

14 I tell you, this man went downe to his houſe iuſtified rather then the other: * for euery one that exalteth himſelf ſhalbe abaſed; and he that humbleth himſelf ſhall be exalted.

* Matth. 23.12.

15 And they brought vnto him alſo infants, that he would touch them: but when his diſciples ſaw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Ieſus called them vnto him, and ſaid, Suffer little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of ſuch is the kingdom of God.

17 Verily I ſay vnto you, Whoſoeuer ſhall not receiue the kingdom of God as a little childe, ſhall in no wiſe enter therein.

18 * And a certain ruler aſked him, ſaying, Good Maiſter, what ſhall I do to inherit eternall life?

* Matth. 19.16.

19 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Why calleſt thou me good? none is good ſaue one, that is, God.

20 Thou knoweſt the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not ſteal, Do not beare falſe witneſſe, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he ſaid, All theſe haue I kept from my youth vp.

22 Now when Ieſus heard theſe things, he ſaid vnto him, Yet lackeſt thou one thing, ſell all that thou haſt, and diſtribute vnto the poore, and thou ſhalt haue treaſure in heauen, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very ſorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Ieſus ſaw that he was very ſorrowfull, he ſaid, How hardly ſhall they that haue riches enter into the kingdom of God!

25 For it is eaſier for a camel to go thorow a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it, ſaid, Who then can be ſaued?

27 And he ſaid, The things which are vnpoſſible with men are poſſible with God.

28 Then

28 * Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. * Matth. 19.27.

29 And he said unto them; Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 ¶ * Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. * Matth. 20.17.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully intreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to pass that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blinde man sat by the way side begging: * Matth. 20.29.

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cryed, saying, Jesus thou Son of David, have mercie on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cryed so much the more, Thou Son of David, have mercie on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight, thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediatly he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Zacheus a publicane. 11 The ten pieces of money. 28 Jesus rideth unto Jerusalem, 41 weepeth over it, 45 and purgeth the temple.

AND Jesus entred and passed thorow Jericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chief among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and could not for the presse, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him; for he was to passe that way.

5 And

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zacheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is the son of Abraham.

10 * For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

* Matth. 18.11.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

12 * He said therefore, A certain noble man went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.

* Matth. 25.14.

13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten ‖ pounds, and said unto them, Occupie till I come.

‖ Mina here translated a pound, is twelve ounces and an half: which according to five shillings the ounce, is three pounds two shillings six pence.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authoritie over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant: thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury.

24 And

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.
25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)
26 For I say unto you, * That unto every one which hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. * Matth. 13. 12.
27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.
28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.
29 * And it came to passe when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethanie at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, * Matth. 21. 1.
30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you, in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.
31 And if any man ask you, Why do you loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.
32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.
33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?
34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.
35 And they brought him to Jesus; and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.
36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.
37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice for all the mightie works that they had seen,
38 Saying, Blessed be the king that cometh in the Name of the Lord, peace in heaven, and glorie in the highest.
39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.
40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.
41 ¶ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,
42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.
43 For the dayes shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keep thee in on every side,
44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee, and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

* Matth. 21.12. 45 * And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought.

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of theeves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chiefe priests and the scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might do: for all the people || were very attentive to hear him.

Or, hanged on him.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ avoucheth his authority by a question of Johns baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard. 19 Tribute to Cesar.

* Matth. 21.23. AND * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chiefe priests, & the scribes came upon him with the elders,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, By what authoritie dost thou these things? or whois he that gave thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answer me.

4 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then believed ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

* Matth. 21.33. 9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: * A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey for a long time.

10 And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and give

give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them and said, What is this then that is written, * The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? * Psal. 118.22.

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which would feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governour.

21 And they asked him, saying, * Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God ‖ truly. * Matth. 22.16. ‖ Or, of a truth.

22 Is it lawfull for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or no?

23 But he perceived their craftinesse, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a ‖ peny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesars. ‖ See Matth. 18.28.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which be Cesars, and unto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

27 ¶ * Then came to him certain of the Sadducees (which say that there is any resurrection) and they asked him, * Matth. 22.23.

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childelesse.

31 And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marrie, and are given in marriage:

35 But they which shalbe accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equall unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

* Exod. 3.6. 37 Now that the dead are raised, * Even Moses shewed at the bush, when he called the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

* Matth. 22.42. 41 And he said unto them, * How say they that Christ is Davids son?

42 And David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,

* Matth. 23.5. 46 * Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts.

47 Which devour widows houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The poor widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the temple and citie is foretold.

AND he looked up, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. * Mark 12.41.

2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in thither two mites.

¶ See Mark 12.42. 3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God, but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

* Matth. 24.1. 5 ¶ * And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said,

6 As for these things which ye behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? And what signe will there be when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neer: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not

not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

10 * Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. * Matth. 24.7.

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearfull sights, and great signes shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before, what ye shall answer. * Matth. 10. 19.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay, nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake.

18 * But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules. * Matth. 10.30.

20 * And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. * Matth. 24.15.

21 Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the mountains, and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes: for there shall be great distresse in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations, and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, untill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 ¶ * And there shall be signes in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars, and upon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring, * Matth. 24.29.

26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then look up, and lift up your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not passe away till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfetting, and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple for to hear him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan entreth into Judas. 7 The passeover prepared. 19 The supper instituted. 47 Judas betrayeth him.

1 Matth. 26.2. NOw the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passeover.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 Matth. 26.14. ¶ Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunitie to betray him unto them || in the absence of the multitude.

|| Or, without tumult.

7 ¶ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passeover must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passeover, that we may eat.

9 Matth. 26.17. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?

12 And

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.

14 * And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. * Matth. 26.20.

15 And he said unto them, || With desire I have desired to eat this passeover with you before I suffer. || Or, I have heartily desired.

16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among your selves.

18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

19 ¶ * And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me. * Matth. 26.26.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ * But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table. * Matth. 26.21.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined, but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 * And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactours. * Matth. 20.25.

26 But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, * and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. * Matth. 19.28.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, * Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: * 1 Pet. 5.8.

32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both into prison, and to death. * Matth. 26.34.

34 * And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this

this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

* Matth. 10.9. 35 * And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then said he unto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

* Isai. 53.12. 37 For I say unto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, * And he was reckoned among the transgressours: for the things concerning me, have an end.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

* Matth. 26.36. 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives, and his disciples also followed him.

* Matth. 26.41. 40 * And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stones cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

44 And being in agonie, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

* Matth. 26.47. 47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him.

48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jesus answered, and said, Suffer ye thus far: And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

* Matth. 26.57. 54 ¶ * Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priests house, and Peter followed afar off.

55 * And

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them. * Mark 14.67.

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.

61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ * And assoon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests, and the scribes came together, and led him into their councell, * Mark 15.1.

67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe.

68 And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, * Ye say that I am. * Mark 14.62.

71 And they said, What need we any further witnesse? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Jesus is accused before Pilate: 7 Sent to Herod: 8 Mocked, and sent back again to Pilate: 18 Delivered to be crucified. 46 His death. 50 His burial.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a king.

3 * And

Matth. 27.11. 3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jury, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate & Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 ¶ And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people,

Matth. 27.23. 14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people, and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

Matth. 27.21. 18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas:

19 (Who for a certain sedition made in the citie, and for murder was cast in prison)

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evill hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed.

24 And

24 And Pilate ‖ gave sentence that it should be as they required.

‖ Or, assented.

25 And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired: but he delivered Jesus to their will.

26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the crosse, that he might bear it after Jesus.

* Matth. 27.32.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

30 * Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us, and to the hills, Cover us.

* Isaiah 2.19. Hoseah 10.8. Revel. 6.16.

31 * For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

* 1 Pet. 4.17.

32 * And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death.

* Matth. 27.38.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called ‖ Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactours, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

‖ Or, the place of a scull.

34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others, let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of greek, and latine, and hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactours, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the ‖ earth until the ninth hour.

‖ Or, land.

45 And

45 And the sun was darkned, and the vail of the temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cryed with a loud voice, he said, * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counseller, and he was a good man, and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments, and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs resurrection declared to the women. 3 They report it to others. 12 Christ himself appeareth. 51 He ascendeth.

NOw * upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: * Remember how he spake unto you, when he was yet in Galilee,

7 Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And

* Psal. 31.5.

* Matth. 27.57.

* Matth. 28.1.

Or, him that liveth.

* Matth. 17.23.

8 And they remembred his words,
9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.
10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.
11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.
12 * Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondring in himself at that which was come to passe. * John 20. 6.
13 ¶ And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs. * Mark 16. 12.
14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.
15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew neer, and went with them.
16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.
17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another as ye walk, and are sad?
18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe there in these dayes?
19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:
20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.
21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.
22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:
23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.
24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said, but him they saw not.
25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken:
26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?
27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded

pounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent: and he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they arose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondred, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honey-comb.

43 And he took it, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ * And

* Mark 16.14.

49 ¶ * And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the citie of Jerusalem, untill ye be endued with power from on high. * John 15.26. Acts 1.4.

50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lift up his hands and blessed them.

51 * And it came to passe, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. * Mark 16.19. Acts 1.2.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to Saint JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 Christs divinitie, humanitie and office. 15 Johns testimonie of him. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 * The same was in the beginning with God. * Genes. 1.1.

3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made. * Colos. 1.16.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not.

6 ¶ * There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. * Matth. 3.1.

7 The same came for a witnesse, to bear witnesse of the light, that all men through him might believe.

8 He was not that light, but was sent to bear witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. * Heb. 1.2.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he || power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his Name: || Or, the right, or, priviledge.

13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 * And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and * Matth. 1.16.

(And we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ John bare witnesse of him, and cryed, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his fulnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18 No man hath seen God at any time: the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Iewes sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou || that prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an answer to them that sent us? what sayest thou of thy self?

23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not.

27 He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which || taketh away the sin of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples:

36 And

36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where || dwellest thou? || Or, abidest.

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day, for it was || about the tenth hour. || That was two hours before night.

40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, || the Christ. || Or, the anointed

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, || a stone. || Or, Peter,

43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom * Moses in the law and the prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. * Gen. 49. 10. Deut. 18. 18. ** Isaiah. 4. 2.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth into Capernaum and Jerusalem, 14 and purgeth the temple.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there.

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith vnto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith vnto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saith vnto the servants, Whatsoever he saith vnto you, do it.

6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins a piece.

7 Jesus saith vnto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brim.

8 And he saith vnto them, Draw out now, and bear vnto the governour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith vnto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine vntil now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples beleeved on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iewes passeover was at hand, and Jesus went vp to Jerusalem,

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting:

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen, and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables:

16 And said vnto them that sold doves, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house an house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, *The zeal of thine house hath eaten me vp.

18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Jesus answered and said vnto them, *Destroy this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp.

20 Then said the Jews, Fourty and six yeers was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his bodie.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he had said this vnto them: and they beleeved the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 ¶ Now

* Psal. 69.9.

* Matth. 26.61.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passeover, in the feast day, many believed in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration, 14 Faith in Christ. 16 Gods great love to the world. 23 Johns baptisme, witnesse, and doctrine of Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born || again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. || Or, from above.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marvell not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born || again. || Or, from above.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testifie that we have seen, and ye receive not our witnesse.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not; how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 ¶ And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wildernesse: even so must the Son of man be lifted up: Numb. 21. 9.

15 That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternall life.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.

6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins a piece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples believed on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they continued there not many days.

13 ¶ And the Jews passeover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting:

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables;

16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house an house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, * The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.

20 Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 ¶ Now

* Psal. 69. 9.

* Matth. 26. 61.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passeover, in the feast day, many believed in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration, 14 Faith in Christ. 16 Gods great love to the world. 23 Johns baptisme, witnesse, and doctrine of Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born || again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. || Or, from above.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marvell not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born || again. || Or, from above.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testifie that we have seen, and ye receive not our witnesse.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not; how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he || came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 ¶ * And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilder- || nesse: even so must the Son of man be lifted up: * Num. 21. 9.

15 That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternall life.

16 ¶ * For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son; that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

* 1. John 4.9.

17 * For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world: but that the world through him might be saved.

* Chap. 12.47.

18 ¶ He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the Name of the only begotten Son of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather then light, because their deeds were evil.

* Chap. 1.4.

20 For every one that doth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be ‖ reproved.

‖ Or, discovered.

21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Jesus & his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them, * and baptized.

* Chap. 3.4.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Aenon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of Johns disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, * to whom thou hast born witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

* Chap. 1.7. 34.

27 John answered and said, * A man can ‖ receive nothing except it be given him from heaven.

* Hebr. 4.5.

‖ Or, take unto himself.

28 Ye your selves bear me witnesse, that I said, * I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

* Chap. 1.20.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoyceth greatly because of the bridegroums voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, * hath set to his seal, that God is true.

* Rom. 3.4.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

* Matth. 11.27. * Hab. 2.4.

35 * The father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.

36 * He that believeth on the Son, hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.

1. John 3.10.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himself unto her. 27 His disciples marvell. 31 Christs zeal to Gods glorie.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized mo disciples then John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 And he must needs go thorow Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neer to the parcell of ground * that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.

* Gen. 33. 19. and 48. 22. Josh. 24. 32.

6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus therefore being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the citie to buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Jew askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattell?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saiest thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou
art a Prophet.
20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say,
* Deut. 12. 5. that in * Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.
21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour
cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at
Jerusalem worship the Father.
22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we
worship: for salvation is of the Jews.
23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true wor-
shippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for
the Father seeketh such to worship him.
* 2. Cor. 3. 17. 24 * God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must
worship him in spirit and in truth.
25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias
cometh (which is called Christ): when he is come, he will tell
us all things.
26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he.
27 ¶ And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that
he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest
thou? or, why talkest thou with her?
28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her
way into the city, and saith to the men,
29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I
did: is not this the Christ?
30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.
31 ¶ In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying,
Master, eat.
32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye
know not of.
33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any
man brought him ought to eat?
34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of
him that sent me, and to finish his work.
35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then com-
eth harvest? Behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and
look on the fields: * for they are white already to harvest.
* Matth. 9. 37. 36 And he that reapeth, receiveth wages, and gathereth
fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that
reapeth may rejoyce together.
37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and an-
other reapeth.
38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no
labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their
labours.
39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that city believed
on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told
me all that ever I did.
40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto him, they
besought

beſought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many moe believed, because of his own word;

42 And ſaid unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy ſaying, for we have heard him our ſelves, and know that this is indeed the Chriſt, the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two dayes he departed thence, and went into Galilee. * Matth. 13.57.

44 For Jeſus himſelf teſtified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having ſeen all the things that he did at Jeruſalem at the feaſt: for they alſo went unto the feaſt.

46 So Jeſus came again into Cana of Galilee, * where he made the water wine. And there was a certain ‖ nobleman, whoſe ſon was ſick at Capernaum. * Chap. 2.1. ‖ Or, courtier, or, ruler.

47 When he heard that Jeſus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and beſought him that he would come down, and heal his ſon: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, Except ye ſee ſignes and wonders, ye will not believe.

49 The nobleman ſaith unto him, Sir, come down ere my ſonne die.

50 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Go thy way, thy ſon liveth. And the man believed the word that Jeſus had ſpoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his ſervants met him, and told him, ſaying, Thy ſon liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend: and they ſaid unto him, Yeſterday at the ſeventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the ſame hour, in the which Jeſus ſaid unto him, Thy ſon liveth, and himſelf believed, and his whole houſe.

54 This is again the ſecond miracle that Jeſus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Jeſus on the ſabbath-day cureth him that was diſeaſed eight and thirty yeers. 10 The Jews cavill, and perſecute him for it.

AFter * this there was a feaſt of the Jews, and Jeſus went up to Jeruſalem. * Levit. 23.2. Deut. 16.

2 Now there is at Jeruſalem by the ſheep ‖ market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches. ‖ Or, gate.

3 In theſe lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain ſeaſon into the pool,

and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmitie thirtie and eight yeers.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another stepped down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed and walk.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day, * it is not lawfull for thee to carrie thy bed.

* Jere. 17.22.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, ‖ a multitude being in that place.

‖ Or, from the multitude that was

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equall with God.

19 Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doth, these also doth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvell.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickneth them: even so the Son quickneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man: but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:

23 That

23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily, verily I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear, shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself: so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvell not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

29 And shall come forth; * they that have done good unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil unto the resurrection of damnation. * Matth. 25.46.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 * If I bear witnesse of my self, my witnesse is not true. * Chap. 8.14.

32 ¶ * There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true. * Matth. 3.17.

33 Ye sent unto John, * and he bare witnesse unto the truth. * Chap. 1.7.

34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I have greater witnesse than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath born witnesse of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seen his shape. * Matth. 3.17. and 17.5

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. * Deut. 4.12.

39 ¶ Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receive me not:

If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand with five loaves and two fishes. 26 He reproveth the earthly hearers of his word: 35 declareth himself to be the bread of life.

AFter these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

5 When Jesus then lift up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come

* Chap. 12.43.

* Gen. 3.15. Deut. 18.15.

* Levit. 23.5. Deut. 16.1. * Matth. 14.15.

crowne and take him by force to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 * And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea, * Matth. 14.23.

17 And entred into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum, and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great winde that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirtie furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone;

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

27 ‖ Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. ‖ Or, work not.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? * Matth. 3.17. * 1. John. 3.24.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? * Exod. 16.15. Numb. 11.7.

31 * Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. * Psal. 78.25.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life, he that cometh to me, shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven:

42 And they said, * Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

* Matth. 13. 55.

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 * It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me:

* Isaiah 54. 13. Jerem. 31. 34.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, * save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

* Matth. 11. 27.

47 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

62 * What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? * Chap. 3. 13.

63 It is the spirit that quickneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go, thou hast the words of eternall life.

69 * And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ the Son of the living God. * Matth. 16. 16.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devill?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

1 Jesus reproveth his kinsemen, 10 goeth up to the feast of tabernacles: 14 teacheth in the temple. 40 Divers opinions of Christ. 45 The Pharisees are angry at their officers, and at Nicodemus.

AFter these these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jury, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 * Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand. * Levit. 23. 34.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in secret, and he

him.

manifest seeketh to be known openly: if thou do these things, shew thy self to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alwayes ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are evill.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, * for my time is not yet full come.

* Chap. 8. 20.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man; others said, Nay, but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man || letters, having never learned?

|| learning

16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God, or whether I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

19 * Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? * Why go ye about to kill me?

* Deut. 24. 1. * Chap. 5. 18.

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvell.

22 ¶ Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, * but of the fathers) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man.

* Levit. 12. 3. * Gen. 17. 10.

23 If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

24 * Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

* Without breaking the law of Moses

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

* Deut. 1. 16.

26 But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.

34 * Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come. * Chap. 13.33.

35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? Or, Greeks.

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

37 * In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. * Levit. 23.36.

38 * He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. * Deut. 18.15. * Isaiah 44.3. Joel 2.28.

39 (* But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 * Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? * Matth. 2.5.

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests & Pharisees, and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then

47 They answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them)

51 Doth our law judge any man before it hear him, and know what he doth?

52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ deliverith the woman taken in adulterie. 12 He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine.

JESUS went unto the mount of olives:

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down and taught them.

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adulterie; and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adulterie, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The

* Chap. 3. 1.
* Deut. 17. 8, &c. & 19. 15
* Luke 20. 20.
* Deut. 17. 7.
* Chap. 1. 4, and 9. 5.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thy self, thy record is not true.

14 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Though I bear record of my self, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go, but ye cannot tell whence I come and whither I go. * Chap. 5.31.

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

17 * It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. * Deut. 17.6. Matth. 18.16.

18 I am one that bear witnesse of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father; if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye beleeve not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me, is true, and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my self: but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many beleeved on him.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which beleeved on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and

were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say unto you, *Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin.

*Rom. 6.20. 2. Pet. 2.19.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication, we have one father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

*1. John 3.8.

44 *Ye are of your father the devill, and the lusts of your father ye will do, he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

*1. John 4.6.

47 *He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devill: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily, verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devill. Abraham is dead, and the prophets, & thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoyced to see my day: and he saw it and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeers old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the mids of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 He that was born blinde, is restored to his sight. 8 He is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They excommunicate him. 35 Christ receiveth him, and he confesseth Christ.

AND as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world. * Chap. 1. 9.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he ‖ anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

‖ Or, spread the clay upon the eyes of the blinde man.

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash, and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? and there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blinde man again, What sayest thou of him that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not beleeve concerning him, that he had been blinde, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blinde? How then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blinde:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blinde, and said unto him, Give God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear; wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples:

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, & doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since

22 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they ‖ cast him out.

‖ Or, excommunicated.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I believe, and he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Jesus said, For judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not might see, and that they which see, might be made blinde.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blinde, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see, therefore your sin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the door, and the good shepherd. 14 He proveth by his works that he is Christ. 39 He escapeth the Jews.

VErily, verily I say unto you, He that entreth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth: and the sheep hear his voice, and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

8 All that ever came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

9 I am the door, by me, if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and finde pasture.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

11 * I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

* Isaiah 40.11. Ezek. 34.23.

12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; * and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

* Ezek. 37.22. * Isaiah 53.7,8.

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, * because I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. * This commandment have I received of my Father.

Acts 2.24.

19 ¶ There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad, why hear ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil: can a devil open the eyes of the blinde?

22 ¶ And it was at Jerusalem the * feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

* 1 Mac. 4.59.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou ‖ make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

‖ Or, hold us in suspence.

25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Fathers Name, they bear witnesse of me.

26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

27 My sheep hear my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give unto them eternall life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy: and because that thou, being a man, makest thy self God.

34 Jesus

34 Jesus answered them, *Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? *Psal. 82.6.
35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken:
36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God?
37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.
38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.
39 Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,
40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first baptized, and there he abode.
41 And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man, were true.
42 And many believed on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus four dayes buried. 45 Many Jews believe. 47 The high priests and Pharisees gather a councell against Christ.

NOw a certain man was sick named Lazarus of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.
2 (*It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick) *Matth. 26.7.
3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick)
4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.
5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.
6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.
7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again.
8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither again?
9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.
10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.
11 These things said he, and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.
12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas which is called Didymus, unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lien in the grave four dayes already.

‖ That is, about two miles.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, ‖ about fifteen furlongs off)

19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, assoon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know that even now whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.

24 Martha saith unto him, * I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.

* Luke 14.14. Chap. 5.29.

26 And whosoever liveth and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this?

* Chap. 6.35.

27 She saith unto him, Yea Lord, I believe that thou art the Christ the Son of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come and calleth for thee.

29 Assoon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town: but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groned in the spirit, and † was troubled,

† Or, he troubled himself.

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loved him.
37 And some of them said, Could not this man, * which opened the eyes of the blinde, have caused that even this man should not have died? * Ch. 9. 6.
38 Jesus therefore again groning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.
39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four dayes.
40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest beleeve, thou shouldest see the glory of God?
41 Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lift up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.
42 And I knew that thou hearest me alwayes: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeve that thou hast sent me.
43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.
44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes, and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.
45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, beleeved on him.
46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.
47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a councell, and said, What do we? for this man doth many miracles.
48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeve on him, and the Romanes shall come and take away both our place and nation.
49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same yeer, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,
50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. * Chap. 18. 14.
51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that yeer, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:
52 And not for that nation onely, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.
53 Then from that day forth they took counsell together for to put him to death.
54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews: but went thence unto a countrey neer to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And

55 ¶ And the Jews passeover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the countrey up to Jerusalem before the passeover, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

a Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus. 10 The high priests consult to kill him.

Then Jesus, six dayes before the passeover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons son which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor: but because he was a thief, & * had the bag, & bare what was put therein.

* Chap. 13.29.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poor always ye have with you: but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death.

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

* Matth. 21.8.

12 ¶ * On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus, when he had found a young asse, sat thereon, as it is written,

* Zech. 9.9.

15 * Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: But

But when Jesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto them.

17 The people therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing: behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 * He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternall. * Matth. 10. 39.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled, and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundred: others said, An angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the judgement of this world, now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die.)

34 The people answered him, * We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lift up? Who is this Son of man? * Psal. 110. 4.

35 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While

36 While ye have light beleeve in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Iesus and departed, and did hide himself from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they beleeved not on him:

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, * Lord, who hath beleeved our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

* Isaiah 53.1. Rom. 10.16.

39 Therefore they could not beleeve, because that Esaias said again,

40 * He hath blinded their eyes, and hardned their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

* Matth. 13.14.

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many beleeved on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

43 * For they loved the praise of men more then the praise of God.

* Chap. 5.44.

44 ¶ Iesus cryed, and said, He that beleeveth on me, beleeveth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 * I am come a light into the world, that whosoever beleeveth on me, should not abide in darknesse.

* Chap. 3.19.

47 * And if any man hear my words, and beleeve not, I judge him not; for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

* Chap. 3.17.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him, * the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

* Mark 16.16.

49 For I have not spoken of my self, but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Iesus washing his disciples feet, exhorteth them to humilitie and charity: 18 foretelleth that Judas shall betray him. 36 and Peter denie him.

* Matth. 26.2.

NOw * before the feast of the passeover, when Iesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And supper being ended (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simons Son to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, & went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towell, and girded himself.

5 After that he powreth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

10 Jesus saith to him, He that is washed, needeth not, save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit; and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye say well, for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

16 * Verily, verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater then his Lord, neither he that is sent, greater then he that sent him. * Matth. 10. 24.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. * Chap. 15. 20.

18 ¶ I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel against me. * Psal. 41. 9.

19 ‖ Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye may believe that I am he. Or, from hence-forth.

20 * Verily, verily I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. * Math. 10. 40.

21 * When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. * Matth. 26. 21.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jesus bosom, one of his disciples whom Jesus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He

25 He then lying on Jesus breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a ‖ sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot the son of Simon.

‖ Or, morsell.

27 And after the sop Satan entred into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some of them thought because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then having received the sop, went immediatly out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me, * and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you.

* Chap. 7. 34.

34 * A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

* Levit. 19. 18.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

Chap. 15 17. 1 John 4. 21.

36 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will * lay down my life for thy sake.

* Matth. 26. 33.

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples; 6 professeth himself the way, the truth, the life, and one with the Father.

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions, if it were not so, I would have told you; I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.
8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.
9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father, and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?
10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and Father in me? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.
11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.
12 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father.
13 * And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. * Matth. 7.7.
14 If ye shall ask any thing in my Name, I will do it.
15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.
16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.
17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.
18 I will not leave you || comfortless, I will come to you. || Or, Orphanes.
19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.
20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.
21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me, and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, & will manifest my self to him.
22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?
23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.
24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.
25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.
26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, he shall teach you all things, and bring

bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away: come again unto you: If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do: arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 The consolation and mutuall love between Christ & his members, under the parable of the vine. 18 Comfort in persecution.

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 * Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

* Matth. 15.13.

3 * Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

* Chap. 13.10.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for || without me ye can do nothing.

|| Or, severed from me.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you, continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love: even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

* Chap. 13.34. 1. Thes. 4.9. 1. John 3.11.

12 * This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you

15 Hence-

15 Henceforth I call you not servants, for the servant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I have called you friends: for all things that I have heard of my father, I have made known unto you.

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and * ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain, that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my Name, he may give it you. * Matth. 28. 19.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 * Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater then the lord: if they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. * Matth. 10. 24. Chap. 13. 16.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no ‖ cloak for their sin. ‖ Or, excuse.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.

25 But this cometh to passe, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, * They hated me without a cause. * Psal. 35. 19.

26 * But when the comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of me. * Luke 24. 49. Chap. 14. 26.

27 And ye also shall bear witnesse, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation, by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his own resurrection, and ascension.

THese things have I spoken unto you that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth, It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

how convince. 8 And when he is come, he will || reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement.

9 Of sin, because they believe not on me.

10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit, when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself: but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while and ye shall not see me, and again, a little while and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among your selves of that I said, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoyce, and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she is in travell, hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: * verily, verily I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my Name, he will give it you.

* Matth. 7.7.

24 Hither

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my Name: ask, and ye shall receive: that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ‖ proverbs: the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in ‖ proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. ‖ Or, parables.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my Name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: ‖ Or, parables.

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world, again I leave the world and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ‖ proverb. ‖ Or, parable.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

32 *Behold, the hour cometh, yea is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone, and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. * Matth. 26.31. ‖ Or, his own home.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his father to glorifie him, 6 to preserve his apostles, 11 in unity, 17 and truth: 20 to glorifie them, and other believers with him in heaven.

THese words spake Jesus, and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father the hour is come, glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee.

2 *As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternall life to as many as thou hast given him. * Matth. 28.18.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy Name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me, and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them, *and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. *Chap. 16.27.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own Name, those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition, * that the scripture might be fulfilled.

*Psal. 109.8.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth, thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

*Or, truly sanctified.

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

*Chap. 12.26.

24 * Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 11 Jesus is taken and led to Annas and Caiaphas. 21 And arraigned before Pilate.

WHen Jesus had spoken these words, * he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples. * Matth. 26.36.

2 And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus ofttimes resorted thither with his disciples.

3 * Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanthorns, and torches, and weapons. * Matth. 26.47.

4 Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? and they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way,

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, * Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none. * Chap. 17.12.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right ear: the servants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high priest that same year.

14 || * Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people. || And * Annas sent Christ bound unto Caiaphas the high priest, verse 24.

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsell that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not. * Chap. 11.50. * Matth. 26.58.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made

a fire of coals (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

19 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort, and in secret have I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, strake Jesus || with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

|| Or, with a rod.

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evill, bear witnesse of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

* Matth. 26.57.

24 * Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

* Matth. 26.69.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself: * They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it and said, I am not.

26 One of the servants of the high priest (being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again, and immediatly the cock crew.

* Matth. 27.2.

28 ¶ * Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas, unto || the hall of judgement: and it was early, * and they themselves went not into the judgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the passeover.

|| Or, Pilates house.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man?

* Acts 10.28.

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawfull for us to put any man to death:

* Matth. 20.19.

32 * That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

* Matth. 27.11.

33 * Then Pilate entred into the judgement hall again, and called Jesus, & said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

34 Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? thine own nation, and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me, what hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end

was

was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witnesse unto the truth: every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.

38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

39 * But ye have a custome, that I should release unto you one at the passeover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the king of the Jewes? * Matth. 27.15.

40 Then cryed they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber. * Acts 3.14.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and beaten, 16 delivered to be crucified. 11 He dieth: 38 He is buried.

THen * Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him. * Matth. 27.26.

2 And the souldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail king of the Jews: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe: and Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cryed out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid.

9 And went again into the judgement hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? but Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee, hath the greater sin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him, but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sate down in the judgement seat, in a place that is called the pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the passeover, and about

the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your king.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

*Matth. 27.31. 16 *Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified: and they took Jesus and led him away.

17 And he bearing his crosse, went forth into a place called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha.

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse: the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latine.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews, but that he said, I am king of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

*Matth. 27.35. 23 ¶ *Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments (and made four parts, to every souldier a part) and also his coat: now the coat was without seam, ‖ woven from the top throughout.

‖ Or, wrought

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: *that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

*Psal. 22.18.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of ‖ Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

‖ Or, Clopas.

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.

28 ¶ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, *that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

*Psal. 69.21. 29 Now there was set a vessell full of vineger: and they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it upon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vineger, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the crosse on the sabbath-

day

day (for that sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

36 For these things were done, * that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. * Exod. 12.46.

37 * And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced. Numb. 9.12.

38 ¶ * And after this, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore and took the body of Jesus. Psal. 34.20. * Zech. 12.10.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes about an hundred pound weight. * Matth. 27.57.

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre: 3 So do Peter and John. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 Thomas his incredulity and confession.

THe * first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. * Matth. 1.28. Mark 16.1.

2 Then she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the * other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. * Chap. 13.23. and 21.20.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together, and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stooping down, and looking in, saw the linen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie,

7 And

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and believed.

9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lyen:

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardiner, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary: She turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father, but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father: and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples, that she had seen the Lord, & that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 * Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whosesoever sins ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord: but he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, & put my finger into the print of

the

* Mark. 16.14.

* Matt. 18.18.

the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithless, but believing.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

30 ¶ * And many other signes truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. *Chap. 21. 25.

31 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appeareth to his disciples being a fishing. 12 He dineth with them: 15 Commandeth Peter to feed his lambs: 18 and foretelleth Peters death.

AFter these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and on this wise shewed he himself:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaneel of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entred into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, ‖Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. ‖Or, Sirs.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coat unto him (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith unto him again the second time, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He said unto him the third time, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about seeth the disciple *whom Jesus loved, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

*Chap. 13.23. & 20.2.

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do?

22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.

*Chap. 20.30.

25 *And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

THE

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAP. 1.

1 A repetition of part of Christs history after his passion. 9 Of his ascension. 26 The apostles chuse Matthias in the place of Judas.

THE former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them fourty dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

4 And || being assembled together with them, commanded them, that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, * which saith he, ye have heard of me.

5 * For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

8 * But ye shall receive || power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into

|| Or, eating together with them.

* Luke 24.49.

* Matth. 3.11.

* Chap. 2.1.

|| Or, the power of the holy Ghost coming upon you.

* Luke 24.51.

into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath-dayes journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphens, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twenty)

16 Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.

*Psal. 41.9.

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this ministerie.

18 * Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

*Matth. 27.7.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

20 * For it is written in the book of psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: * And his ‖ bishoprick let another take.

*Psal. 69.25. *Psal. 109.8. ‖Or, office, or, charge.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witnesse with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministery and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven apostles.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 The apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others. 14 Whom Peter disproveth. 17 He baptizeth those that were converted.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty winde, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sate upon each of them:

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now || when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak, Galileans?

8 And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Lybia, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, & hearken to my words:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

16 *But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel,

17 And it shall come to pass in the last dayes (saith God) I will pour out of my spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

18 And on my servants, and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those dayes of my spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signes in the earth beneath: blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.

20 *The

Joel *

* Isaiah 44.3. Joel 2.28.

|| Or, when this voice was made.

Or, troubled in minde.

* Joel 2.31. 20 * The sun shall be turned into darkenesse, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

* Rom. 10.13. 21 * And it shall come to passe, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles, wonders and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selves also know:

23 Him, being delivered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain:

24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

* Psal. 16.8. 25 For David speaketh concerning him, * I foresaw the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my right hand that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope.

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made known to me the wayes of life, thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men and brethren, † let me freely speak unto you * of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day:

† Or, I may.

* 1 King. 2.10.

* Psal. 132.11. 30 Therefore being a prophet, * and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loyns, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ, to sit on his throne:

* Psal. 16.10. 31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, * that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear.

* Psal. 110.1. 34 For David is not ascended into the heavens, but he saith himself, * The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Until I make thy foes thy footstool.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Iesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

38 Then

38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words he did testifie and exhort, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signes were done by the apostles.

44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread || from house to house, did eat their meat with gladnesse, and singlenesse of heart,

|| Or, at home.

47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter and John restore a lame man to his feet. 12 How the cure was wrought. 19 The people are reprehended, and exhorted to repentance.

NOw Peter and John went up together into the temple, at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

2 And a certain man, lame from his mothers womb, was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple, which is called Beautifull, to ask alms of them that entred into the temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.

4 And Peter fastning his eyes upon him, with John, said, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none, but such as I have, give I thee: In the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift him up, and immediatly his feet and ankle bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvell ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holinesse we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus, whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

14 * But ye denied the holy One, and the Just, and desired a murtherer to be granted unto you,

15 And killed the || Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name through faith in his Name, hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom the heaven must receive, untill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets, since the world began.

22 * For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me: him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to passe, that every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, * saying unto Abraham,

*Matth. 27.20. ||Or, Author.

* Deut. 18.15. Chap. 7.37.

* Gene. 22.18.

Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers offended at Peters sermon, imprison him and John: 5 They examine them. 8 Peters boldnesse. 13 They are commanded to preach no more in Christs Name.

AND as they spake unto the people, the priests and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them, (rulers)

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, believed, and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered to gether at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole,

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 *This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. *Psal. 118.22. Matth. 21.42.

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed, standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the councell they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But that it ſpread no further among the people, let us
ſtraitly threaten them, that they ſpeak henceforth to no man in
this Name.
18 And they called them, and commanded them not to
ſpeak at all, nor teach in the Name of Jeſus.
19 But Peter and John anſwered and ſaid unto them,
Whether it be right in the ſight of God, to hearken unto you
more then unto God, judge ye.
20 For we cannot but ſpeak the things which we have
ſeen and heard.
21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them
go, finding nothing how they might punish them, becauſe of
the people: for all men glorified God for that which was
done.
22 For the man was above fourty yeers old on whom
this miracle of healing was ſhewed.
23 ¶ And being let go, they went to their own company,
and reported all that the chief prieſts and elders had ſaid un-
to them.
24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to
God with one accord, and ſaid, Lord, thou art God which
haſt made heaven and earth, and the ſea, and all that in
them is.
* Pſal. 2.1. 25 *Who by the mouth of thy ſervant David haſt ſaid, Why
did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things?
26 The kings of the earth ſtood up, and the rulers were
gathered together againſt the Lord, and againſt his Chriſt.
27 For of a truth againſt thy holy childe Jeſus, whom thou
haſt anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the
Gentiles, and the people of Iſrael were gathered together,
28 For to do whatſoever thy hand and thy counſell deter-
mined before to be done.
29 And now Lord, behold their threatnings: and grant
unto thy ſervants, that with all boldneſſe they may ſpeak thy
word,
30 By ſtretching forth thine hand to heal; and that ſignes
and wonders may be done by the Name of thy holy childe
Jeſus.
31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was ſhaken where
they were aſſembled together, and they were all filled with the
holy Ghoſt, and they ſpake the word of God with boldneſſe.
32 And the multitude of them that believed, were of one
heart and of one ſoul: neither ſaid any of them, that ought of
the things which he poſſeſſed, was his own, but they had all
things common.
33 And with great power gave the Apoſtles witneſſe of the
reſurrection of the Lord Jeſus, and great grace was upon
them all.
34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as
many

many as were possessours of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them down at the apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

1. 10 Ananias and Sapphira fall down dead. 12 The apostles work many miracles. 18 They are imprisoned, 19 delivered by an angel, 33 in danger to be killed, but Gamaliel keepeth them alive.

BUt a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privie to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, || to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? || Or, to deceive.

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband, are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many signes and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Salomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man join himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And beleevers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women)

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick || into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least, the shadow of Peter passing by, might over-shadow some of them.

|| Or, in every street.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits, and they were healed every one.

17 ¶ Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him (which is the sect of the Sadducees) and were filled with || indignation,

|| Or, envie.

18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the councell together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the councell: and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying, * Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this name? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood upon us.

* Chap. 4. 18.

29 ¶ Then Peter and the other apostles, answered and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a prince and

and a Sauiour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiuenesse of sins.

32 And we are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsell to slay them.

34 Then stood there up one in the counsell, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space,

35 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selues, what ye intend to do as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be some body, to whom a number of men about foure hundred, ioyned themselues: who was slain, and all, as many as || obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. || Or, beleeved.

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell or this work be of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot ouerthrow it, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the Name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the counsell, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 The apostles care for the poor, and for preaching the word.
3 Seven men chosen for deacons: 5 of whom Steven is one;
12 Who is taken, 13 and falsly accused.

AND in those dayes, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serue tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seuen men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisdom, whom we may appoint ouer this businesse.

4 But we will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steven, a man full of faith and of the holy ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch.

6 whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly: and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Steven full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Steven.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the councell,

13 And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ‖ customs which Moses delivered us.

Or rites.

15 And all that sat in the councell, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 Steven answereth to his accusation. 51 He reprehendeth the peoples rebellion, and murdering of Christ: 54 Therefore they stone him to death.

THen said the high priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, & from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

a Gene. 12. 1.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no childe.

6 And

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreat them evill four hundred yeers.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8 * And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: * and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: * and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob * begat the twelve patriarchs.

9 * And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and * gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he made him governour over Egypt, and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 * But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

13 * And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brethren, and Josephs kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.

15 * So Jacob went down into Egypt, * and died, he and our fathers,

16 And were carried over into Sichem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a summe of money of the sons of Emmor, the father of Sichem.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose which knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evill entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children to the end they might not live.

20 * In which time Moses was born, and * was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his fathers house three moneths:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words, and in deeds.

23 And when he was full fourty yeers old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

24 * And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

* Gene. 17.9.
* Gene. 21.3.
* Gene. 25.26.
* Gene. 39.21. &c.
* Gene. 37.28.
* Gene. 41.37.
* Gene. 42.1.
* Gene. 45.4.
* Gene. 46.5.
* Gene. 49.33.
* Exod. 2.2.
* Hebr. 11.23. Or, fair to God.
* Exod. 2.11.

25 For

25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them, but they understood not.

* Exod. 2.13. 26 * And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren, why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us?

28 Will thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.

* Exod. 3.2. 30 * And when fourty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sinai, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord came unto him,

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet, for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

Exod. 7. Exod. 6.1. Deut. 8.15. 36 He brought them out, after that he had * shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the red-sea, * and in the wilderness fourty years.

Deut. 18.15. 37 ¶ This is that Moses which said unto the children of Israel; * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, ‖ like unto me, him shall ye hear.

‖ as my self * Exod. 38.3. 38 * This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt

* Exod. 32.1. 40 * Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those dayes, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

* Amos 5.25. 42 Then God turned and gave them up to worship the host of heaven, * as it is written in the book of the prophets,

O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourtie yeers in the wildernesse?

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernesse, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the dayes of David.

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to finde a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 * But Solomon built him an house.

48 * Howbeit, the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the prophet,

49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my foot stool: what house will ye build me, saith the Lord? or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glorie of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cryed out with a loud voyce, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

48 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Steven, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down and cryed with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

* Exod. 25.40.

*1 Chro. 17. 12. * Chap. 17.24.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The church planted in Samaria by Philip: 14 confirmed and enlarged by Peter and John. 26 Philip is sent to baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his buriall, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entring into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man called Simon, which before-time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the Name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: onely they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles

apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thy self to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, How can I except some man should guide me? and he desired Philip that he would come up, and sit with him.

32 The place of the scripture which he read, was this, *He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth. * Isa. 53.7

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water, what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still, and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing thorow he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is stricken down to the earth, 10 is called to the apostleship, 18 baptized by Ananias, 20 and preacheth Christ.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he journeyed he came neer Damascus; and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the citie, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here Lord.

11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street, which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord I have heard by many of this man, how much evill he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chiefe priests to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessell unto me to bear my Name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receceive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had been scales, and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this Name in Jerusalem and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chiefe priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Jews took counsell to kill him:

24 But their laying a wait was known of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him. 2 Cor. 11.32.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples; but they were all afraid of him, and beleeved not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the Name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed throughout all quarters, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight yeers, and was sick of the palsie.

34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and almes-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not || delay to come to them.

|| Or, be grieved.

39 Then Peter arose and went with them, when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up: and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa, and many beleeved in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe that he tarried many dayes in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius sendeth for Peter, 11 who by a vision, 15 is taught not to despise the Gentiles. 34 Peter preacheth. 44 The holy Ghost falleth on the hearers. 48 They are baptized.

THere was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house,

which

which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always.

3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea-side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the citie, Peter went up upon the house to pray, about the sixth hour.

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessell descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter: kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessell was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean: behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the Centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: and on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up, I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawfull thing for a man that is a Jew, to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, assoon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Four dayes ago I was fasting untill this hour, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter, he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner, by the sea-side, who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediatly therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, * Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons:

* Deut. 10. 17. Rom 2. 11. 1. Pet. 1. 17

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (I say) you know, which was published thorow out all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devill: for God was with him.

39 And

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem, whom they slew, and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses, chosen before of God, even to us who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testifie, that it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead.

43 * To him give all the prophets witnesse, that through his Name whosoever beleeveth in him, shall receive remission of sins. * Jer. 31. 34. Mic. 7. 18.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on them all which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeved, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The gospel is spread. 26 At Antioch the disciples first called Christians.

AND the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessell descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners, and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise Peter, slay, and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediatly there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, * Chap. as on us at the beginning. 2.4.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he * John. said, John indeed baptized with water, but ye shall be 1.26. baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who beleeved on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad upon the * Chap. persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as 8.1. Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeved, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch:

23 Who when he came and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeer they assembled themselves || with the church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch. || Or, in the church.

27 ¶ And

27 ¶ And in these dayes came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world, which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James, and imprisoneth Peter, who is delivered by the angel. 20 Herods pride, and miserable death.

NOw about that time, Herod the king ‖ stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church. ‖ Or, began.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the dayes of unleavened bread)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of souldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but ‖ prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. ‖ Or, instant and earnest prayer was made.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two souldiers, bound with two chains, and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and binde on thy sandals: and so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, and forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing he came to the
house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was
Mark, where many were gathered together, praying.
13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsell came ||to hearken, named Rhoda.
||Or, to ask who was there.
14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the
gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood be-
fore the gate.
15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she con-
stantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is
his angel.
16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had
opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished.
17 But he beckening unto them with the hand to hold
their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought
him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things un-
to James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went
into another place.
18 Now assoon as it was day, there was no small stirre
among the souldiers what was become of Peter.
19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him
not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they
should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Ce-
sarea, and there abode.
20 ¶ And Herod ||was highly displeased with them of
Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and
having made Blastus †the kings chamberlain their friend,
desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the
kings countrey.
||Or, bare an hostile minde, intending war.
† Gr. that was over the kings bed-chamber.
21 And upon a set day, Herod arayed in royall apparell,
sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.
22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a
God, and not of a man.
23 And immediatly the angel of the Lord smote him, be-
cause he gave not God the glory, and he was eaten of wormes,
and gave up the ghost.
24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.
25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem,
when they had fulfilled their ||ministery, and took with them
John whose surname was Mark.
||Or, charge, Chap. 11 29.30.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch. 42 The Gentiles beleeve: 45 The Jews blaspheme.

NOw there were in the church that was at Antioch, cer-
tain prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, & Simeon,
that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen,
||which had been brought up with Herod † tetrarch, & Saul.
||Or, Herods foster brother,
2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost,
said

said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work where-
unto I have called them.
3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their
hands on them, they sent them away.
4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed
unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.
5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the
word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had
also John to their minister.
6 And when they had gone thorow the Isle unto Paphos,
they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose
name was Barjesus:
7 Which was with the deputie of the countrey, Sergius
Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and
Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.
8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by inter-
pretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputie
from the faith.
9 Then Saul (who is called Paul) filled with the holy
Ghost, set his eyes on him,
10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou
childe of the devill, thou enemy of all righteousnesse, wilt thou
not cease to pervert the right wayes of the Lord?
11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and
thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sun for a season. And im-
mediatly there fell on him a mist and a darknes, and he went
about, seeking some to lead him by the hand.
12 Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, beleeved,
being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.
13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Pa-
phos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John depart-
ing from them, returned to Jerusalem.
14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to
Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sab-
bath day, and sat down.
15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the
rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and
brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people,
say on.
16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with his hand, said, * Exod.
Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience. 1. 1.
17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and * Exod.
exalted the people *when they dwelt as strangers in the land 13. 14, 16.
of Egypt, *and with an high arm brought he them out of it. † Gr. ἐτροφοφόρησεν,
18 And about the time of fourtie yeers † suffered he their perhaps for
manners in the wildernesse.

ἐτροφοφόρησεν, as a nurse beareth, or, feedeth her childe, Deut. 1. 31.
2. Mac. 7. 27. according to the Sept. and so Chrysost.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land
* Josh. 14.2. of Chanaan, * he divided their land to them by lot.
* Judges 3.9. 20 And after that he gave unto them judges, about ỹ space
of four hundred and fifty yeers, untill Samuel the prophet.
* 1 Sam. 8.5. 21 * And afterward they desired a king, and God gave un-
to them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benja-
min, by the space of fourtie yeers.
* 1 Sam. 16.13. 22 And when he had removed him, * he raised up unto
* Psal. 89.20. them David to be their king, to whom also he gave testima-
* Isai. 11.1. nie, and said; * I have found David the son of Jesse, a man
after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.
* Matth. 3.1. 23 * Of this mans seed hath God according to his pro-
* John 1.20. mise raised unto Israel a Saviour Jesus:
24 * When John had first preached before his coming, the
baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.
25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, * Whom think
ye that I am? I am not he. But behold, there cometh one af-
ter me, whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.
26 Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham,
and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word
of this salvation sent.
27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, be-
cause they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets,
which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in
* Matth. 27.22. condemning him. *
* Matth. 28.6. 28 * And though they found no cause of death in him, yet
* Psal. 2.7. desired they Pilate that he should be slain.
29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him,
they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.
30 * But God raised him from the dead:
Heb. 1.5 31 And he was seen many dayes of them which came up
* Isai. 55.3. with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses
unto the people.
†Gr. τα ὅσια, holy or, just things: which word the Sept. both in the place of Isaiah 55.3. and in many others, use for that which is in the Hebrew *mercies*.
32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the
promise which was made unto the fathers,
33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that
he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the se-
cond psalm, * Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee.
34 And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead,
now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, * I
will give you the sure † mercies of David.
35 Wherefore he saith also in another psalm, * Thou shalt
not suffer thine holy One to see corruption.
36 For David ‖ after he had served his own generation
by the will of God, * fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fa-
thers, and saw corruption:

* Psal. 16. 10. ‖ Or, after he had in his own age served the will of God. * 1 King. 2. 10.

37 But

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption.
38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgivenesse of sins.
39 And by him all that beleeve are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.
40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken of in * the prophets,
41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which you shall in no wise beleeve, though a man declare it unto you.
42 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them † the next sabbath.
43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.
44 ¶ And the next sabbath day came almost the whole citie together to hear the word of God.
45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envie, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.
46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, & said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.
47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, * I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.
48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleeved.
49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.
50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.
51 * But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.
52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

* Hab. 1. 5.

† Greek in the week between, or, in the sabbath between.

* Isaiah 49. 6.

* Matth. 10. 14.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 8 Paul healing a creeple, they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They passe thorow divers churches, and return to Antioch.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, & so spake, that a great

a great multitude both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks, beleeved.

2 But the unbeleeving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their mindes evill affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was divided, and part held with the Jews, and part with the apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled unto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about.

7 And there they preached the gospel.

8 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a creeple from his mothers womb, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak, who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand up right on thy feet; and he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The Gods are come down to us in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter which was before their citie, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, * which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

* Gene. 1.1. Psal. 146. 6. Revel. 14.7.

16 * Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own wayes.

17 Nevertheless, he left not himself without witnesse, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

* Psal. 81.12.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

* 2. Cor. 11.25.

19 ¶ And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the citie, supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit,

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Dissension about the circumcision. 6 The apostles consult about it. 22 Their determination. 36 Paul and Barnabas contend, and part asunder.

AND certain men which came down from Judea, taught * Gal. the brethren, and said, * Except ye be circumcised after 5.2. the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees, which believed, saying, That it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose * Chap. 10 up and said unto them, * Men and brethren, ye know how that 20. & 11 a good while ago, God made choice among us, that the Gen- 13.

tiles

ſſes by my mouth ſhould hear the word of the goſpel, and beleeve.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witneſſe, giving them the holy Ghoſt, even as he did unto us:

* Chap. 10.43. 1.Cor. 1.2. * Matth. 23.4.

9 And put no difference betweene us and them, *purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, *to put a yoke upon the neck of the diſciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But we beleeve that through the grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, we ſhall be ſaved even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James anſwered, ſaying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the firſt did viſit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets, as it is written;

* Amos 9.11.

16 *After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will ſet it up:

17 That the reſidue of men might ſeek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my Name is called, ſaith the Lord, who doth all theſe things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abſtain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things ſtrangled, and from blood.

21 For Moſes of old time hath in every citie them that preach him, being read in the ſynagogues every ſabbath day.

22 Then pleaſed it the apoſtles and elders with the whole church to ſend choſen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: namely, Judas ſurnamed Barſabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The apoſtles, and elders, and brethren, ſend greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Foraſmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, ſubverting your ſouls, ſaying, Ye muſt be circumciſed, and keep the law, to whom we gave no ſuch commandment:

25 It ſeemed good unto us, being aſſembled with one accord, to ſend choſen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden then these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch, and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced for the || consolation.

|| Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren, in every citie where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them Jehn, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus;

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went thorow Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination: 19 He and Silas are whipped and imprisoned.

THen came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, * named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman which was a Jewesse, and believed, but his father was a Greek:

* Rom. 16,21.

2 Which

ſſles by my mouth ſhould hear the word of the goſpel, and beleeve.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witneſſe, giving them the holy Ghoſt, even as he did unto us:

* Chap. 10.43. 9 And put no difference betweene us and them, *purifying their hearts by faith.

1. Cor. 1.2. 10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, *to put a yoke upon the neck of the diſciples, which neither our fathers nor we

* Matth. 23.4. were able to bear?

11 But we beleeve that through the grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, we ſhall be ſaved even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James anſwered, ſaying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the firſt did viſit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets, as it is written;

* Amos 9.11. 16 *After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will ſet it up:

17 That the reſidue of men might ſeek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my Name is called, ſaith the Lord, who doth all theſe things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abſtain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things ſtrangled, and from blood.

21 For Moſes of old time hath in every citie them that preach him, being read in the ſynagogues every ſabbath day.

22 Then pleaſed it the apoſtles and elders with the whole church to ſend choſen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: namely, Judas ſurnamed Barſabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The apoſtles, and elders, and brethren, ſend greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Foraſmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, ſubverting your ſouls, ſaying, Ye muſt be circumciſed, and keep the law, to whom we gave no ſuch commandment:

25 It ſeemed good unto us, being aſſembled with one accord, to ſend choſen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden then these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch, and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced for the || consolation.

|| Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren, in every citie where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them Jehn, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus;

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went thorow Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination: 19 He and Silas are whipped and imprisoned.

THen came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, * named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman which was a Jewesse, and believed, but his father was a Greek:

* Rom. 16,21.

2 Which

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him, and took and circumcised him because of the Jews which were in those quarters, for they knew all that his father was a Greek.

4 And as they went throughout the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, * that were ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusalem.

* Cha. 15.28.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is ‖ the chief citie of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we were in that citie abiding certain dayes.

‖ Or, the first.

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the citie by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made, and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to passe as we went to prayer, a certain damsell possessed with a spirit of ‖ divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying:

‖ Or, Python.

17 The same followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains

gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the ‖ market-place, unto the rulers,

‖ Or, court.

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men, being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our citie,

21 And teach customs which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them, and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and * commanded to beat them.

* 2. Cor. 11. 25. 1. Thess. 2. 2.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jaylour to keep them safely.

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earth-quake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken, and immediatly all the doors were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Do thy self no harm, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Beleeve on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes, and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced, beleeving in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romanes, and have cast us into prison, and now do they thrust us out privily? nay verily, but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And

38 And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

* Verse 14. 40 And they went out of the prison, * and entred into the house of Lydia, and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 10 at Berea: 15 He disputeth and preacheth at Athens. 34 Many are converted.

NOw when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-dayes reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

3 Opening and alleadging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeved, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which beleeved not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the citie on an uproar: and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the citie, crying, These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also,

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is another king, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readinesse of minde, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeved: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.
14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas & Timotheus abode there still.
15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens, and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.
16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city ‖ wholly given to idolatry. ‖Or, full of idols.
17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.
18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountred him: and some said, What will this ‖babler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. ‖Or, base fellow.
19 And they took him, and brought him unto ‖Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, wherof thou speakest, is? ‖Or, Mars hill.
20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.
21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing) It was the highest court in Athens.
22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of ‖ Mars hill and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. ‖Or, court of the Areopagites.
23 For as I passed by, and beheld your ‖devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you. ‖Or, gods that you worship. 2. Thess. 2. 4.
24 * God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands: * Cha. 7. 48.
25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, * as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things: * Psal 50. 8.
26 And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation.
27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and finde him, though he be not far from every one of us.
28 For in him we live, and move and have our being, as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his off-spring.

* Isaiah 40.18.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God, * we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath ‖ given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

‖ Or, offered faith.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked, and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certain men clave unto him, and believed: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul labouring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, is encouraged by a vision, accused before the deputie, but dismissed. 24 Of Apollos.

AFter these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth;

* Rom. 16.3.

2 And found a certain Jew named * Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tentmakers)

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and perswaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was Christ.

* Matth. 10.14.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, * he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads, I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans house named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

* 1 Cor. 1.14.

8 * And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I have much people in this citie.

11 And

11 And he †continued there a yeer and six moneths, teaching the word of God among them. †Greek, sate there

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you.

15 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it, for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drave them from the judgement seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagouge, and beat him before the judgement seat: and Gallio careth for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this, tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila; having shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entred into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not;

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem; but I will return again unto you, * if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus. * 1. Cor. 4. 19. Jam. 4. 15.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went over all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ * And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus. * 1. Cor. 1. 12.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing onely the baptisme of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, & expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who when he was come, helped them much which had beleeved through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publikely shewing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost is given by Pauls hands.

AND it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus, and finding certain disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be an holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? and they said, unto Johns baptisme.

*Matth. 3.11.

4 Then said Paul, *John verily baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying unto the people, That they should beleeve on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when divers were hardned, and beleeved not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeers, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul,

12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evill spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evill spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus, and fear fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And

18 And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia, and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred unto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silver-smith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen.

25 Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought: but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion, and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travell, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one

voice a'bout the space of two houres cryed out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter?

† Greek the temple keeper.

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen, which are with him, have a matter against any man || the law is open, and there are deputies; let them implead one another.

|| Or, the court dayes are kept.

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a || lawfull assembly.

|| Or, ordinarie.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia: 7 He celebrateth the Lords Supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus falling down dead, 10 is raised to life. 17 and 18 At Miletus he committeth the flock to the elders, 36 and prayeth.

AND after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus: and Gaius of Derbe and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five dayes, where we abode seven dayes.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together * to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech until midnight.

* Chap. 2. 46.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus,

Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep, and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not your selves, for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.

14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia; for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many tears, and temptations which befell me by the lying in wait of the Jews:

20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publikely, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions ‖ abide me.

‖ Or, wait for me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self; so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministerie which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testifie the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsell of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three years, I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans silver, or gold, or apparell.

34 Yea, you your selves know, that these hands have ministred unto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kissed him.

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

1. Cor. 4. 12. 1. Thess. 2. 9. 2. Thess. 3. 8.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Paul will not be dissuaded from going to Jerusalem. 9 Philips daughters prophetesses. 17 Paul at Jerusalem 27 is apprehended and in great danger: but is rescued by the chief captain.

AND it came to passe, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a strait course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven dayes: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those dayes, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with

with wives and children, till we were out of the citie: and we kneeled down on the shore and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship, and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company departed, and came unto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of Philip the evangelist, (* which was one of the seven) and abode with him. * Chap. 6.5.

9 And the same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as we tarried there many dayes, there came down from Judea a certain prophet named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem binde the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the Name of the Lord Jesus.

14 And when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also certain of the disciples of Cesarea: and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with us unto James, and all the elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come.

23 Do

23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: We have four men which have a vow on them;

24 Them take, and purifie thy self with them, and be at
*Numb. 6. 18. charges with them, that they may * have their heads: and all
Chap. 18. 18. may know that those things wherof they were informed
concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy self also walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

* Chap. 15. 20. 25 As touching the Gentiles which believe, * we have written and concluded, that they observe no such thing, save onely that they keep themselves from things offered to idoles, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying
* Numb. 6. 13. himself with them, entred into the temple, * to signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the seven dayes were almost ended, the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and further, brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seen before with him in the citie, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediatly took souldiers, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chief captain and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cryed one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came upon the stairs, so it was that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain; May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?

38 * Art not thou that Egyptian which before these dayes
* Chap. 5. 36. mayest an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?

24 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean citie: and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckned with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth how he was converted, 17 and called to his apostleship: 22 Mentioning the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 24 He escapeth scourging, by the privilege of a Romane.

MEn, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence, which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith)

3 *I am verily a man which am a Jew, borne in Tarsus a citie in Cilicia, yet brought up in this citie, at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day. * Chap. 21.39.

4 *And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women. * Chap. 8.3.

5 As also the high priest doth bear me witnesse, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there bound unto Jerusalem for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus, about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice, saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me, saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, Receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee,

thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance:

18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in every synagogue them that beleeved on thee.

* Chap. 7.58. 20 *And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lift up their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cryed out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bad that he should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cryed so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying, Take heed what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chief captain came and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? he said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was free born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him, which should have || examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

|| Or, tortured him

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their councell to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commandeth to smite him. 7 Dissention among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Jews laying wait for him, 20 is declared to the captain. 27 He is sent to Felix.

AND Paul earnestly beholding the councill, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, until this day.

2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Revilest thou God's high priest?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not brethren, that he was the high priest: for it is written, * Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people. * Exod. 22.28.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cryed out in the councill, Men and brethren, * I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: * of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question. *Phi.3.5 * Chap. 24.21.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissention between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.

8 * For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confesse both. * Matth. 22.23.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and strove, saying, We finde no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissention, the chief captain fearing lest Paul would have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to go down, to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves || under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. ||Or, with on oath of execration.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing untill we have slain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the councill, signifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though

though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Paul's sisters son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee that thou wouldest bring down Paul to morrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yield unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsmen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night,

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the governour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner.

26 Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governour Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their councill:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On

32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the governour had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods judgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Paul accused by Tertullus, 10 answereth for himself: 24 preacheth Christ to the governour and his wife; 27 he going out of his office, leaveth Paul in prison.

AND after five dayes, Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and with a certain orator named Tertullus, who enformed the governour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seing that by thee we enjoy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places most noble Felix, with all thankfulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemencie a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarens.

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckned unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many yeers a judge unto this nation, I do the more chearfully answer for my self:

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve dates since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse unto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and the prophets:

15 And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many years I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

18 Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult:

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the councill,

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister or come unto him.

24 And after certain dayes, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewesse, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousnesse, temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two yeers, Porcius Festus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

1 Paul accused before Festus, 8 answereth for himself. 11 Appealeth to Cesar. 14 Festus openeth the matter to Agrippa: 23 He is brought forth, 24 and cleared by Festus.

NOw when Festus was come into the province, after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then

18 Cha. 24.27.

19 Cha. 23.6.

2 Then the high priest, and the chiefe of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him,
3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.
4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither.
5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.
6 And when he had tarried among them ‖ more then ten dayes, he went down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgement seat commanded Paul to be brought.
7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.
8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.
9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?
10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars judgement seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.
11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.
12 Then Festus, when he had conferred with the counsell, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.
13 And after certain dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.
14 And when they had been there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:
15 About whom when I was at Jerusalem, the chiefe priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgement against him.
16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.
17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sate on the judgement seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.
18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:
19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition,

‖ Or, as some copies read, no more then eight or ten dayes.

superstition, and of one Jesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

‖Or, I was doubtfull how to enquire hereof. ‖Or, judgement.

20 And because ‖I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the ‖hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man my self. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chief captains and principall men of the city, at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord: wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 Paul before Agrippa declareth his life, 12 his conversation and calling. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad. 28 Agrippa almost perswaded to be a Christian.

THen Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself,

2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customes and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem know all the Jews,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes instantly serving God

God day and night hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to do many things contrary to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth.

10 * Which thing I also did in Jerusalem, and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests, and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them. * Chap. 8.3.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme: and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12 * Whereupon as I went to Damascus with authority, and commission from the chief priests: * Chap. 9.2.

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stand upon thy feet, for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee,

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thy self, much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speak forth the words of truth and soberness.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am perswaded that none of these things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not only thou, but also all that hear me this day were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that sat with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, but is not beleeved. 14 They are tossed to and fro with a tempest, 41 and suffer shipwrack, 22. 34. 44. yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica being with us.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon, and Julius courteously intreated Paul, and gave him libertie to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the windes were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra a citie of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy, and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come over against Gnidus, the windes not suffering us, we sailed under ‖ Creet, over against Salmone:

‖ Or, Candie.

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called, the fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now

now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voiage will be with || hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives. ||Or, injurie

11 Nevertheless, the centurion beleeved the master and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, & there to winter; which is an haven of Creet, and lieth toward the south-west & north-west.

13 And when the south-winde blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence they sailed close by Creet.

14 But not long after there || arose against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon. ||Or, beat

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the winde, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain Island which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship, and fearing lest they should fall into the quick-sands, strake sail, and so were driven.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightned the ship.

19 And the third day we cast out with our hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sun, nor stars in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkned unto me, and not have loosed from Creet, and to have gained this harm and losse:

22 And now I exhort you to be of good chear: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar; and lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs, be of good chear: for I beleeve God that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain Island.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neer to some countrey:

28 And sounded and found it twentie fathoms: and when

they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchres out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast anchres out of the forepart,

31 Paul said to the Centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health: for there shall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightned the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had ‖taken up the anchres, they committed themselves unto the sea, and loosed the rudder-bands, and hoised up the main sail to the winde, and made toward shore.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground, and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out and escape.

43 But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

‖ *Or*, cut the anchres, they left them in the sea, &c.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 The Barbarians kindnesse to Paul. 5 The viper on his hand. 11 They depart toward Rome. 17 He declareth the cause of his coming. 24 Some beleeve his preaching, and some do not. 30 yet he preacheth there two yeers.

AND when they were escaped, then they knew that the Iland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindenesse: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one because of the present rain, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastned on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venemous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he should have swoln, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their mindes, and said, that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the Iland, whose name was Publius, who received us, and lodged us three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flix, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the Iland, came and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the Ile, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the south-winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarrie with them seven dayes: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Apii forum, and the three tabernes: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have

committed nothing against the people or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see you, and to speak with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know, that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some beleeved the things which were spoken, and some beleeved not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers,

26 Saying, * Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeers in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

* Isaiah. 6.9. Matth. 13.14. Mark 4.12. Luke 8.10. John 12.40. Rom. 11.8.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
the apostle to the ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls calling: 9 His desire to come to them: 16 What his gospel is. 18 Gods anger against all sin. 21 The Gentiles sins.

PAul a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, *separated unto the gospel of God, * Acts 13.2.

2 (which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures)

3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh,

4 And †declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead. † G. determined

5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship ||for obedience to the faith among all nations for his Name. ||Or, to the obedience of faith.

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serve ||with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers, ||Or, in my spirit.

10 Making request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spirituall gift, to the end you may be established.

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ||with you, by the mutuall faith both of you and me. Or, in you.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit ||among you also, even as among other Gentiles. Or, in you.

14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, *The just shall live by faith.

* Hab. 2.4.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodlinesse, and unrighteousnesse of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest ‖ in them, for God hath shewed it unto them.

‖ Or, to them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternall power and Godhead, ‖ so that they are without excuse.

‖ Or, that they may be.

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkned.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools:

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible * God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

* Psal. 106.20.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleannesse, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more then the Creatour, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the naturall use into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the naturall use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men, working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their errour which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like ‖ to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to ‖ a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not convenient:

‖ Or, to acknowledge.

‖ Or, a minde void of judgement.

29 Being filled with all unrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, covetousnesse, maliciousnesse, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despitefull, proud, boasters, inventers of evill things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, ‖ without naturall affection, implacable, unmercifull;

‖ Or, unsociable.

32 Who knowing the judgement of God (that they which commit such things, are worthy of death) not onely do the same, but ‖ have pleasure in them that do them.

‖ Or, consent with them.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 They that condemn sin in others, and yet sin, are inexcusable,
9 whether they be Jews or Gentiles.

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thy self, for thou that judgest, dost the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgement of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and dost the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnesse, and impenitent heart, * treasurest up unto thy self wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God:

* James 5.3.

6 * Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

* Psal. 62.12. * Matth. 16.27. Revel. 22.12.

7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortalitie; eternall life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousnesse, indignation, and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the † Gentile.

† Gr. Greek

10 But glory, honour and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the † Gentile.

† Gr. Greek.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law,

13 (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, || their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts || the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)

|| Or, the conscience witnessing with them. || Or, between themselves.

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God:

18 And knowest his will, and || approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,

|| Or, tryest the things that differ.

19 And art confident that thou thy self art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which are in darknesse,

20 And

20 An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the forme of knowledge, and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adulterie, dost thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilledge?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you as it is * written.

*Isaiah 52.5. Ezek. 36.20.23

25 For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousnesse of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgresse the law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.

29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Jews prerogative. 9 Yet the law conviuceth them also of sin. 20 None justified by the law, 28 but all by faith.

WHat advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeve? shall their unbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar, as it is written, * That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

*Psal. 51.4.

5 But if our unrighteousnesse commend the righteousnesse of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glorie; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

8 And not rather as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come: whose damnation is just.

9 What

9 What then? are we better then they? No in no wise: for we have before † proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin,

† Greek, charged.

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one.

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse.

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become ‖ guilty before God.

‖ Or, subject to the judgement of God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

22 Even the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath ‖ set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the ‖ remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

‖ Or, foreordained

‖ Or, passing over.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay, but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith, without the deeds of the law.

29 Is he the God of the Jews only? Is he not also of the Gentiles? yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God which shall justifie the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Abrahams faith imputed for righteousnesse, 10 before he was circumcised. 16 Abraham the father of all beleevers. 24 Our faith shall be also imputed for righteousnesse.

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glorie, but not before God.

3 For what saith the scripture, Abraham beleeved God, and it was counted unto him for righteousnesse.

4 Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeveth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessednesse of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without works,

7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

9 Cometh this blessednesse then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckned to Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seal of the righteousnesse of the faith, which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that beleeve, though they be not circumcised; that righteousnesse might be imputed unto them also:

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that onely which is of the law, but to that also which is of

the

the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all,

17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations) ‖ before him whom he beleeved, even God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were,

18 Who against hope beleeved in hope, that he might become the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken, * So shall thy seed be.

19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred yeers old, neither yet the deadnesse of Sara's womb.

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief, but was strong in faith, giving glory to God:

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:

24 But for us also to whom it shall be imputed, if we beleeve on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead,

25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

* Gene. 17.5. ‖ Or, like unto.

* Gene. 15.5.

CHAP. V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God. 12 Sin and death came by Adam, 17 righteousnesse and life by Christ.

THerefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 By whom also we have accesse by faith into this grace wherein we stand and rejoyce in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not onely so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:

4 And patience, experience: and experience hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost which is given unto us.

6 For when we were yet without strength, ‖ in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then being now justified by his bloud, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not onely so, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

‖ Or, according to the time.

12 Where-

12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entred into the world, and death by sin: and so death passed upon all men, ||for that all have sinned.

13 For until the law sin was in the world, but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift: for if through the offence of one many be dead; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

17 For if ||by one mans offence, death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousnesse, shall reign in life by one Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore as ||by the offence of one, judgement came upon all men to condemnation: even so ||by the righteousnesse of one, the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover, the law entred, þ the offence might abound: but where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as sin hath reigned unto death; even so might grace reign through righteousnesse unto eternall life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not live in sin, 12 nor let sin reign in us. 23 Death is the wages of sin.

WHat shall we say then? shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how shall we that are dead to sin live any longer therein?

3 Know ye not that so many of us as ||were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptisme into death, that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newnesse of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likenesse of his death: we shall be also in the likenesse of his resurrection.

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead, is †freed from sin.

8 Now

||Or, in whom.

||Or, by one offence.

||Or, by one offence.

||Or, by one righteousnesse.

||Or, are.

†Gr. Justified.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleeve that we shall also live with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also your selves to be dead indeed unto sin: but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reigne in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yeeld ye your members as †instruments of unrighteousnesse unto sin: but yeeld your selves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousnesse unto God.

† Greek armes, or, weapons

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yeeld your selves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey: whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousnesse?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that forme of doctrine †which was delivered you.

† Greek whereto ye were delivered.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousnesse.

19 I speak after the manner of men, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as ye have yeelded your members servants to uncleannesse, and to iniquity, unto iniquity, even so now yeeld your members servants to righteousnesse, unto holinesse.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free †from righteousnesse.

† Greek, to righteousnesse.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and became servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holinesse, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth. 7 The law is not sin, 12 but holy, just, and good.

KNow ye not, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

3 So then, if while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteresse: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the †motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, ‖that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newnesse of spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Yea, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known ‖lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

8 But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once, but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

13 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good: that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold under sin.

15 For that which I do, I †allow not: for what I would, that do I not: but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For

†Gr. passions.

‖Or, being dead to that.

‖Or, concupiscence.

†Gr. know.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man.
23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my minde, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members.
24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from || the body of this death?
25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the minde I my self serve the law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sin.

|| Or, this body of death.

CHAP. VIII.

a Who are free from condemnation. 5, 13 What harm cometh of the flesh, 6, 14, and what good of the Spirit, 17 and what of being Gods childe.

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.
2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death.
3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and || for sin condemned sin in the flesh:
4 That the righteousnesse of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.
5 For they that are after the flesh, do minde the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.
6 For † to be carnally minded, is death: but † to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:
7 Because † the carnall minde is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.
8 So then, they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.
9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.
10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin: but the Spirit is life because of righteousnesse.
11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you: he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies || by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.
12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.
13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the bodie, ye shall live.
14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.
15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to

|| Or, by a sacrifice for sin.

† Gr. the minding of the flesh.
† Gr. the minding of the Spirit.
† Gr. the minding of the flesh.
|| Or, because of his Spirit.

feare: but ye have receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it selfe beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires, heires of God, and ioynt heires with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be reuealed in vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subiect to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subiected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it selfe also shall be deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the children of God.

(For, every creature.) 22 For we know that || the whole creation groaneth and trauelleth in pain together vntill now.

23 And not only they, but our selues also which haue the first-fruits of the Spirit, euen we our selues groane within our selues, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the * redemption of our body.

(* Luke 21.28.) 24 For we are saued by hope: but hope that is seen, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs with groanings which cannot be vttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of the Spirit, (for, that) || because he maketh intercession for the saints, according to the will of God.

28 And we know that all things worke together for good to them that loue God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also iustified: and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for vs, who can be against vs?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but deliuered him vp for vs all: how shall he not with him also freely giue vs all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that justifieth:
34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.
35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword?
36 (As it is written, *for thy sake we are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter) * Psal. 44.22.
37 Nay in all these things we are more then conquerours, through him that loved us.
38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,
39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls sorrow for the Jews. 7 All Abrahams seed were not children of the promise. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Jews.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,
2 That I have great heavinesse and continuall sorrow in my heart.
3 For I could wish that my self were ‖ accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsemen according to the flesh: ‖ Or, separated.
4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the ‖ covenants, and the giving of the law and the service of God, and the promises: ‖ Or, testaments
5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.
6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:
7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but in * Isaac shall thy seed be called, * Gen. 21.12.
8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.
9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son. * Gen. 18.10.
10 And not only this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac,
11 (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth)

12 It was said unto her, The * ‖ elder shall serve the ‖ younger:

13 As it is written, * Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

14 What shall we say then? is there ‖ unrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses, * I will have mercie on whom I will have mercie, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercie.

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, * Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercie on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet finde fault? For who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that ‖ repliest against God? * shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the * potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessell unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath ‖ fitted to destruction:

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glorie on the vessels of mercie, which he had afore prepared unto glorie?

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, * I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloved, which was not beloved.

26 * And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called, the children of the living God.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

28 For he will finish ‖ the work, and cut it short in righteousnesse: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, * Except the Lord of Sabbaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed

* Gen. 25.23.
‖ Or, greater.
‖ Or, lesser.
* Mal. 1.2,3.
* Exod. 33.19.
* Exod. 9.16.
‖ Or, answereſt again, or diſputeſt with God.
* Isaiah 45.9.
* Jere. 18.6. Wisd. 15.7.
‖ Or, made up.
* Hosea 2.23. 1.pet. 2.10.
* Hosea 1.10.
* Isaiah 10.22,23
‖ Or, the account.
* Isaiah 1.9.

lowed not after righteousnesse, have attained to righteousnesse, even the righteousnesse which is of faith:

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousnesse, hath not attained to the law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rock of offence; and whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ‖ ashamed.

* Isaiah 8.14. and 28.16. 1. Pet. 2.6. ‖ Or, confounded.

CHAP. X.

5 The difference of the righteousnesse of the law, and that of faith. 12 No beleever shall be confounded, whether Jew or Gentile.

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their own righteousnesse, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousnesse to every one that beleeveth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is of the law, that * the man which doth those things, shall live by them.

* Levit. 18.5. Ezek. 20.11. Gal. 3. 12.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, * Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is to bring Christ down from above)

7 Or, who shall descend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead)

* Deut. 30.12.

8 But what saith it? * The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

* Deut. 30.14.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt beleeve in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleeveth unto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the scripture saith, * Whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

* Isaiah 28.16.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 * For whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord, shall be saved.

* Joel 2.32. Acts 2.21.

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not beleeved? and how shall they beleeve in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, * How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, * Lord, who hath beleeved † our ‖ report?

17 So then, faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, have they not heard? Yes verily, * their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, * I will provoke you to jealousie, by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, * I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

* Isa. 52. 7. Nah. 1. 15.
* Isa. 53. 1. Joh. 12. 38.
† Gr. the hearing of us.
‖ Or, preaching.
* Psal. 19. 4. * Deut. 32. 21.
* Isa 65. 1
* Isa 65. 2.

CHAP. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected, though the rest were hardned. 16 There is hope of their conversion. 18 The Gentiles may not insult upon them.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 * Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? * I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace, otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ‖ blinded:

8 According as it is written, * God hath given them the spirit of ‖ slumber, * eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear unto this day.

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a recompence unto them.

10 * Let their eyes be darkned, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.

* 1. King. 19. 14.
* 1. King. 19. 18.
‖ Or, hardned.
* Isa. 29. 10.
‖ Or, remorse.
* Isa 6. 9.
* Psal. 69. 22.
* Psal. 69. 23.

11 I say then, have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousie.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the ‖ diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse? ‖ Or, decay, or, loss.

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, and in as much as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation, them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first-fruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde olive tree, wert grafted in ‖ among st them, and with them partakest of the root and fatnesse of the olive-tree: ‖ Or, for them.

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well: because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse, and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but towards thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: other wise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is wilde by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive-tree; how much more shall these which be the naturall branches be grafted into their own olive-tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that ‖ blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, until the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in. ‖ Or, hardnesse.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written, * There shall come out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodlinesse from Jacob. * Isa. 59. 20.

27 For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

28 As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For

30 For as ye in times past have not ‖ believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

31 Even so have these also now not ‖ believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath ‖ concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, or who hath been his counseller?

35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glorie for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercie must move us to please God. 16 Every man must attend his calling. 9 Love and other duties required. 19 Revenge forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prove what is that good, that acceptable and perfect will of God.

3 For I say through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to think † soberly according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophesie, let us prophesie according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or ministrie, let us wait on our ministring: or he that teacheth on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth on exhortation: he that ‖ giveth, let him do it ‖ with simplicity: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulnesse.

9 Let love be without dissimulation: abhorre that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another, ‖ with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another.

11 Not slothfull in businesse: fervent in spirit, serving the Lord.

12 Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Di-

* Or, obeyed.
‖ Or, obeyed.
‖ Or, shut them all up together.
* Isaiah 40.13. Wisd. 9.13. 1. Cor. 2.16.
† Greek, to sobrietie.
‖ Or, imparteth
‖ Or, liberally.
‖ Or, in love of the brethren.

13 Distributing to the necessitie of saints, given to hospitalitie.
14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse and curse not.
15 Reioyce with them that do reioyce, and weep with them that weep.
16 Be of the same minde one towards another. Minde not high things, but ‖ condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.
17 Recompense to no man evill for evill. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.
18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.
19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.
20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.
21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

‖ Or, be contented with mean things.

* Deut. 32.35. * Prov. 25.21.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Subjection, and many other duties we owe to the magistrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law. 11 Gluttony and drunkennesse and the works of darknesse, are out of season in the time of the gospel.

LEt every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God, the powers that be, are ‖ ordained of God.
2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation.
3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the evil: wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same.
4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou do that which is evill, be afraid: for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doth evill.
5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.
6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.
7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour.
8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law.

‖ Or, ordered.

9 For

9 For this, thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not covet: and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

11 And that knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer then when we believed.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darknesse, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk ‖ honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambering and wantonnesse, not in strife and envying.

‖Or, decently.

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Men may not contemn or condemn one the other for things indifferent, 12 but take heed of giving an offence in them.

HIm that is weak in the faith receive you, but ‖ not to doubtfull disputations.

‖Or, not to judge his doubtful thoughts

2 For one believeth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth. For God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another mans servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: For God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be ‖ fully perswaded in his own minde.

‖Or, fully assured.

6 He that ‖ regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

‖Or, observeth.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord: and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou

let us weyghe thy brother? * we shall all stande before the
iudgement seat of Christ. * 2.Co.
11 For it is written, * As I liue saith the Lord, every knee 5.10.
shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confesse to God. * Isai
12 So then every one of us shall giue account of himself to 45.23
God.
13 Let us not therefore iudge one another any more: but
iudge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block, or an
occasion to fall in his brothers way.
14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Iesus, that
there is nothing † vnclean of it self: but to him that esteem-
eth any thing to be † vnclean, to him it is vnclean. † Gr.
15 But if thy brother be grieued with thy meat: now walk- common.
est thou not † charitably. * Destroy not him with thy meat, † Gr. * Gr.
for whom Christ died. comman. 1
16 Let not then your good be euill spoken of. † Gr. ac-
17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but cording
righteousnesse and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost. to cha-
18 For he that in these things serueth Christ, is accept- ritie.
able to God, and approued of men. * 1.Cor.
19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make 8.11.
for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.
20 For meat destroy not the work of God. * All things * 1. Tim.
indeed are pure, but it is euill for that man who eateth with 1.15.
offence. * 1 Cor.
21 It is good neither to eat * flesh, nor to drink wine, nor 1.13.
any thing wherein thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is ‖ Or dis-
made weak. cerneth
22 Hast thou faith? haue it to thy self before God. Happy and, ut-
is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he al- tereth a
loweth. differēce
23 And he that ‖ doubteth, is damned if he eat, because he betweene
eateth not of faith: for whatsoeuer is not of faith is sin. meats.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must bear with the weak. 2 We may not please our selues, 7 but receiue one another, as Christ did us all.

WE then that are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selues.
2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.
3 For euen Christ pleased not himself, but as it is written, * The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me. * Psal.
4 For whatsoeuer things were written aforetime, were 69.9.
written for our learning, that we through patience and com- * 1.Cor.
fort of the scriptures might haue hope. 10.10.
5 * Now the God of patience & consolation grant you to be On after
like minded one to another, according to Christ Iesus: the ex-
6 That ye may with one mynde and one mouth glorifie ample
God euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ. of.

7 Where-

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercie, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy Name.

* Psal. 18.49.

10 And again he saith, * Rejoyce ye Gentiles with his people.

* Deut. 32.43.

11 And again, * Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

* Psal. 117.1.

12 And again Esaias saith, * There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

* Isaiah 11.10.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that the † offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

† Or sacrificing.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another mans foundation:

21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard, shall understand.

* Isaiah 52.15.

22 For which cause also I have been † much hindred from coming to you.

† Or many wayes, or oftentimes.

23 But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come unto you;

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled † with your company.

† Greek, with you.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem, to ministrer unto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spirituall things, their duty is also to ministrer unto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am sure that when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christs sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me, in your prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be delivered from them, that || do not believe in Judea, and that my service which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

|| Or, are disobedient.

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul sendeth greeting to many, 17 an advice to take heed of those that cause dissention and offences, 21 and endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea,

2 That ye receive her in the Lord as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus.

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks, unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus || houshold.

|| Or, friends

11 Salute

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the || houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

Or, kinde.

12 Salute Tryphena, and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, Mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.

18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their owne belly, and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and || simple concerning evill.

Or, harmlesse

20 And the God of peace shall || bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

Or, tread.

21 Timotheus my worke-fellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the world began,

26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith.)

27 To God only wise be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe servant of the church at Cenchrea.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL the apostle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

After salutation and thanksgiving, 10 he exhorteth to unitie, 12 and reproveth their dissentions. 18 God destroyeth the wisdom of the wise.

PAul called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother,

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that * are sanctified in Christ Jesus, * called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the Name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

* Acts 15.9.
* Rom. 1.7.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God alwayes on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ,

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimonie of Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no gift; waiting for the † coming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

† Greek, revelation.

8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 * God is faithfull, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

* 1. Thes. 5.24.

10 Now I beseech you brethren, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no † divisions among you: but that ye be perfectly joyned together in the same minde, and in the same judgement.

† Greek, schismes.

11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

* Acts 18.24.

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius.

* Acts 18.8.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine own name.

16 And I baptized also the house of Stephanas: besides I know not whether I baptised any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: * not with wisdom of ‖ words, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but unto us which are saved, it is the * power of God.

19 For it is written, * I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

20 * Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisedom of this world?

21 * For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching to save them that beleeve.

22 For the * Jews require a signe, and the Greeks seek after wisdom.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks, foolishnesse:

24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the weaknesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty:

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption.

31 That according as it is written, * He that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

* 2. Pet. 1. 16.
‖ Or, speech.
* Rom. 1. 16.
* Isaiah 29. 14.
* Isaiah 33. 18.
* Rom. 1. 20.
* Matth. 12. 38.
* Jer. 9. 23. 24.

CHAP. II.

1 Pauls preaching, though without excellency of speech, or of wisdom, 5 yet excelleth the wisdom of the world, and 14 the naturall mans understanding.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came not with excellencie of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimonie of God.

* Chap. 1. 17.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And

3 And I was with you in weakneſſe, and in fear, and in much trembling.

4 And my ſpeech, and my preaching * was not with ‖ inticing words of mans wiſdom, but in demonſtration of the Spirit, and of power:

5 That your faith ſhould not † ſtand in the wiſdom of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit we ſpeak wiſdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wiſdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought.

7 But we ſpeak the wiſdom of God in a myſterie, even the hidden wiſdom which God ordained before the world unto our glorie.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glorie.

9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not ſeen, nor eare heard, neither have entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit ſearcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, ſave the ſpirit of man which is in him? even ſo the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received, not the ſpirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13 * Which things alſo we ſpeak, not in the words which mans wiſdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghoſt teacheth; comparing ſpirituall things with ſpirituall.

14 But the naturall man perceiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are fooliſhneſſe unto him: neither can he know them, becauſe they are ſpiritually diſcerned.

15 * But he that is ſpirituall, ‖ judgeth all things, yet he himſelf is ‖ judged of no man.

16 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, that he † may inſtruct him? But we have the minde of Chriſt.

* 2. Pet. 1. 16.
‖ Or, perſwaſible.
† Gr. be.
* Iſaiah 64. 4.
* 1. Pet. 1. 16.
* Prov. 27. 19.
‖ Or, diſcerneth.
‖ Or, diſcerned.
* Iſaiah 40. 13. Rom. 11. 34.
† Gr, ſhall.

CHAP. III.

3 Strifes and diviſions arguments of a fleſhly minde. 7 He that planteth and he that watereth, is nothing.

AND I, brethren, could not ſpeak unto you as unto ſpirituall, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Chriſt.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you envying, and ſtrife, and ‖ diviſions, are ye not carnall, and walk † as men?

‖ Or, factions.
† Gr. according to man.

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo, but ministers by whom ye beleeved, even as the Lord gave to every man?

6 I have planted, Apollo watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: * and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.

9 For we are labourers together with God, ye are Gods || husbandry, ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Every mans work shall be made manifest, For the day shall declare it, because it † shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans work, of what sort it is.

14 If any mans work abide, which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans work shall be burnt, he shall suffer losse: but he himself shall be saved: yet so as by fire.

16 * Know ye not that ye are the temple of God; and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man || defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himself: If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishnesse with God, for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their own craftinesse.

20 And again, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours:

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

* Psal. 62. 12. Gal. 6. 5.

|| Or, tillage.

† Or, is revealed.

* Chap. 6. 19.

|| Or, destroy.

* Job 5. 13. * Psal. 94. 11.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

3 How to account of ministers. 7 We have nothing but we have received it.

LEt a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of mans † judgement: yea, I judge not mine own self. †Gr. day

4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 *Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkenesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God. *Mat. 7. 1 Rom. 2. 1

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think of men, above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who † maketh thee to differ from another? And what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory as if thou hadst not received it? † Gr. distinguisheth thee.

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us, and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a † spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. †Gr. theatre.

10 We are fools for Christs sake, but ye are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong: ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Even unto this present hour we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place:

12 * And labour, working with our own hands, being reviled, we bless: being persecuted, we suffer it: * Act. 20. 34.

13 * Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scowring of all things unto this day. * 1. Thes. 2. 9. 2. Thes. 3. 8.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you. * Mat. 5. 44.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructers in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithfull in the Lord, who shall bring you

into remembrance of my waies which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

18 Now some are puffed up as though I would not come to you.

* Acts 19.21. * James 4.15.

19 * But I will come to you shortly, * if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

20 For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person. 7 The old leaven must be purged out. 10. Hainous offenders must be avoided.

IT is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be taken away from among you.

*Col. 2 5

3 * For I verily as absent in bodie, but present in spirit, have ‖ judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed.

‖ Or, determined

4 In the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

* 1. Tim. 1.20.

5 * To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

* Gal. 5.9.

6 Your glorying is not good? * know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover ‖ is sacrificed for us.

‖ Or, is slain.

8 Therefore let us keep ‖ the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sinceritie and truth.

‖ Or, holy day.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep companie, if any man that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such an one, no not to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But

13 But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

1 Go not to law with the brethren, 6 specially under infidels. 9 The unrighteous shall not inherit Gods kingdom. 15 Our bodies are Christs members.

DAre any of you, having a mater against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbeleevers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer your selves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankinde,

10 Nor theeves, nor coveteus, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them? Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is joyned to an harlot, is one bodie? for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is joyned unto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doth is without

Or, profitable.

the bodie: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own bodie.

19 What know ye not that your bodie is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your bodie, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

CHAP. VII.

1 Marriage, a remedy against fornication: 10 not lightly to be dissolved. 18 Every man must be content with his calling. 25 Of virginitie.

NOw concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own bodie, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own bodie, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer, and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my self: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them, if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burn.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that beleeveth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeveth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbeleeving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbeleeving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But

15 But if the unbeleeving depart, let him depart. A brother or a ſiſter is not under bondage in ſuch caſes: but God hath called us † to peace.

† Greek. in peace.

16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether thou ſhalt ſave thy husband? or how knoweſt thou, O man, whether thou ſhalt ſave thy wife?

17 But as God hath diſtributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, ſo let him walk: and ſo ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumciſed, let him not become uncircumciſed: is any called in uncircumciſion? let him not become circumciſed.

19 Circumciſion is nothing, and uncircumciſion is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the ſame calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a ſervant? care not for it; but if thou mayeſt be made free, uſe it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a ſervant, is the Lords † freeman: likewiſe alſo he that is called being free, is Chriſts ſervant.

|| Greek. made free.

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the ſervants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I ſuppoſe therefore that this is good for the preſent || diſtreſſe, I ſay, that it is good for a man ſo to be.

|| Or, neceſſitie.

27 Art thou bond unto a wife? ſeek not to be looſed. Art thou looſed from a wife? ſeek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou haſt not ſinned, and if a virgin marry, ſhe hath not ſinned: nevertheleſſe, ſuch ſhall have trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.

29 But this I ſay, brethren, the time is ſhort. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, be as though they had none:

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not: and they that rejoyce, as though they rejoyced not: and they that buy, as though they poſſeſſed not:

31 And they that uſe this world, as not abuſing it: for the faſhion of this world paſſeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulneſſe. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may pleaſe the Lord:

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may pleaſe his wife.

34 There is a difference alſo between a wife and a virgin: the

the unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she passe the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessitie, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doth well.

38 So then, he that giveth her in marriage, doth well: but he that giveth her not in marriage doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to be married to whom she will, only in the Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgement: and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 We must abstain from meats offered to idols, 8 and not abuse our liberty to offend our brethren, 11 but bridle our knowledge with charitie.

NOw as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charitie edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father of whom are all things, and we ‖ in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

7 Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol, and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, ‖ are we the better: neither if we eat not, ‖ are we the worse.

9 But

for, for him. Rom. 11.36.

or, have we the more

or, have we the lesse.

9 But take heed lest by any means this ‖ libertie of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weak. ‖ Or, power.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be † imboldned to eat those things which are offered to idols: † Greek, edified.

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls libertie. 7 The minister must live by the gospel. 15 Yet he would not be chargeable, 22 nor offensive. 24 Our life is like a race.

AM I not an apostle? Am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this.

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a ‖ wife as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas? ‖ Or, woman.

6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, *Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen? * Deut. 25.4.

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope: and he that thresheth in hope should be partaker of his hope.

11 *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing, if we shall reap your carnal things? * Rom. 15.27.

12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power: but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

13 *Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, ‖ live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar? * Deut. 18.1. ‖ Or, feed.

14 Even

14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for it were better for me to die then that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessitie is laid upon me, yea, wo is unto me if I preach not the gospel.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily, that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law:

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the masterie, is temperate in all things: Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I my self should be a cast-away.

CHAP. X.

1 The Jews sacraments are types of ours, 7 and their punishments. 11 our examples. 21 We must not make the Lords table the table of devils.

MOreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea:

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea:

3 And

3 And did all eat the same spirituall meat,
4 And did all drink the same spirituall drink: (for they drank of that spirituall Rock that ‖followed them: and that Rock was Christ)
5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderneſſe.
6 Now theſe things were †our ensamples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as *they also lusted.
7 Neither be ye idolaters as were some of them, as it is written, *The people sate down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.
8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and *fell in one day three and twenty thousand.
9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, *and were destroyed of serpents.
10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, and were *destroyed of the destroyer.
11 Now all theſe things happened unto them for ‖ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.
12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.
13 There hath no temptation taken you, but ‖such as is common to man: but God is faithfull, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.
14 Wherefore my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.
15 I speak as to wise men: judge ye what I say.
16 The cup of blessing which we bleſſe, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?
17 For we being many, are one bread and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.
18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?
19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?
20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles *sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.
21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of Devils.
22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousie? are we stronger then he?
23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

‖Or, were with them.
†Gr. our figures.
*Psal. 106. 14.
*Exod. 32. 6.
*Numb. 25. 9.
*Num. 21. 6.
*Num. 14. 37.
‖Or, types.
‖Or, moderate.
*Deut. 32. 17. Psal. 106. 35.

24 Let

24 Let no man seek his own: but every man another's wealth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

* Deut. 10.14. Psal. 24.1. 26 For * the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.

27 If any of them that beleeve not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.

* Deut. 10.14. Psal. 24.1.

29 Conscience I say, not thine own, but of the others: for why is my libertie judged of another mans conscience?

30 For, if I by ‖ grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?

‖ Or, thanksgiving.

31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the † Gentiles, nor to the church of God:

† Gr. Greeks.

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

CHAP. II.

1 He reproveth them, because in holy assemblies men prayed with their heads covered, 6 and women uncovered, 21 for profaning the Lords supper. 23 The first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ‖ ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

‖ Or traditions.

3 But I would have you know that the head of every man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, for as much as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have || power on her head, because of the angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a || covering.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custome, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be || divisions among you, and I partly believe it.

19 For there must be also || hereties among you, that they which are approved, may be made manifest among you.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, || this is not to eat the Lords supper.

21 For in eating every one taketh before other his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or, despise ye the church of God, and shame || them that have not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I have received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

24 * And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat this is my body, which is broken for you: this do || in remembrance of me.

25 After the same maner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, || ye do shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilte of the bodie and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh || damnation to himself, not discerning the Lords bodie.

30 For

|| That is, a covering, in signe that she is under the power of her husband.

|| Or, vaile.

|| Or, schismes

|| Or, sects.

|| Or, ye cannot eat.

|| Or, them that are poor.

* Matth. 26.26. Mark 14.20. Luke 22.19.

|| Or, for a remembrance.

|| Or, shew ye.

|| Or, judgement.

30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

31 For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged.

32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarrie one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that ye come not together unto ‖ condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

‖ Or, judgement.

CHAP. XII.

1 Spirituall gifts are divers, yet all to profit withall. 12 As it is in the naturall bodie, so it should be in the mysticall bodie of Christ.

NOw concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus ‖ accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, anathema.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit:

9 To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophesie, to another discerning of spirits, to another divers kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

12 For as the bodie is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one bodie, being manie, are one bodie: so also is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one bodie, whether we be Jews or † Gentiles, whether we be bond or free: and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

† Greek, Greeks.

14 For the bodie is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, because I am not the hand, I am not of the bodie: is it therefore not of the bodie?

16 And

16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?
17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?
18 But now hath God set the members, every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.
19 And if they were all one member, where were the body.
20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.
21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you.
22 Nay much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.
23 And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we ‖ bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. ‖ Or, put on.
24 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked:
25 That there should be no ‖ schisme in the body: but that the members should have the same care one for another. ‖ Or, division.
26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.
27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.
28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, ‖ diversities of tongues. ‖ Or, kindes.
29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all ‖ workers of miracles? ‖ Or, powers.
30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?
31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The most excellent gifts are nothing without charitie. 4 The praises thereof. 13 It is preferred before hope and faith.

THough I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brasse, or a tinckling cymball.
2 And though I have the gift of prophesie, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge: and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charitie, I am nothing.
3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charitie, it profiteth me nothing.

‖Or, is not rash.

4 Charity suffereth long, and is kinde: charity envieth not: charitie ‖ vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up,

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

‖Or, with the truth

6 Rejoyceth not in iniquity, but rejoyceth ‖ in the trueth:

7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things endureth all things.

8 Charitie never faileth: but whether there be prophesies, they shall fail, whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I understood as a childe, I ‖ thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

‖Or, reasoned.

12 For now we see thorow a glasse † darkly, but then face to face: now I know in part: but then shall I know even as also I am known.

† Gr. in a riddle.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three, but the greatest of these is charity.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Prophesie commended, and preferred before speaking with tongues. 12 Both must be referred to edification. 34 Women must not speak in the church.

FOllow after charity, and desire spirituall gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man † understandeth him: howbeit, in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

† Greek, heareth.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues: but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the ‖ sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?

‖Or, tunes.

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battell?

9 So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue words

† easie,

† eaſie to be underſtood. how ſhall it be knowen what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeak into the air. †Gr. ſignificant.

10 There are, it may be, ſo many kinds of voyces in the world, and none of them are without ſignification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voyce, I ſhall be unto him that ſpeaketh, a Barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh ſhall be a Barbarian unto me.

12 Even ſo ye, foraſmuch as ye are zealous † of ſpirituall gifts, ſeek that ye may excell to the edifying of the church. †Gr. of ſpirits.

13 Wherefore let him that ſpeaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my ſpirit prayeth, but my underſtanding is unfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, and will pray with the underſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, and I will ſing with the underſtanding alſo.

16 Elſe when thou ſhalt bleſſe with the ſpirit, how ſhall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, ſay Amen at thy giving of thanks, ſeeing he underſtandeth not what thou ſayeſt.

17 For thou verily giveſt thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I ſpeak with tongues more then you all:

19 Yet in the church I had rather ſpeak five words with my underſtanding, that by my voyce I might teach others alſo, then ten thouſand words in an unknown tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in underſtanding: howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in underſtanding be † men. †Gr. perfect, or, of a ripe age.

21 In the law it is * written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I ſpeak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, ſaith the Lord. *Iſaiah 28.11.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a ſigne, not to them that beleeve, but to them that beleeve not; but prophelying ſerveth not for them that beleeve not, but for them which beleeve.

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all ſpeak with tongues, and there come in thoſe that are unlearned, or unbeleevers, will they not ſay that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophelie, and there come in one that beleeveth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all.

25 And thus are the ſecrets of his heart made manifeſt, and ſo falling down on his face, he will worſhip God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a pſalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying.

27 If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church, and let him speak to him and to God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to ỳ prophets.

† Gr. tumult, or, unquietnesse.

33 For God is not the author of †confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence in the churches, for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the * law.

* Gen. 3.16.

35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?

37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, covet to prophesie, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

CHAP. XV.

3 By Christs resurrection. 12 He proveth the necessitie of our resurrection. 21 The fruit, 35 and manner thereof, 51 and the change of them that shall be alive.

MOreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein ye stand,

‖Or. hold fast. † Greek, by what speech.

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye ‖keep in memorie †what I preached unto you, unlesse ye have beleeved in vain.

3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.

6 After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that, he was seen of James, then of all the apostles:

8 And

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. Or, an abortive

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain: but I laboured more abundantly then they all; yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me:

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain, ye are yet in your sins.

18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first fruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But every man in his own order, Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christs at his coming.

24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority and power.

25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

27 For he hath put all things under his feet: but when he saith, All things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him.

28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they do, which are baptized for ỹ dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for ỹ dead?

30 And why stand we in ieopardie every houre?
31 I protest by ‖ your reioycing which I have in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daily.
32 If ‖ after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.
33 Be not deceived: evill communications corrupt good manners.
34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sin not: for some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your shame.
35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?
36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest, is not quickned except it die.
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that bodie that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.
38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.
39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.
40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.
41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.
42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sowen in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.
43 It is sowen in dishonour, it is raised in glorie: it is sowen in weaknesse, it is raised in power.
44 It is sown a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall bodie. There is a naturall bodie, and there is a spirituall bodie.
45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickning spirit.
46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.
47 The first man is of the earth earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.
48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy, and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.
49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.
50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.
51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

‖ Some read our. ‖ to speak after the manner of men.

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye, at the last trumpe, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed up in victory. *Hosea 13.14.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O ‖ grave, where is thy victory? ‖ or, hell.

56 The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The brethrens wants must be releeved. 10 Timothie commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 16 Salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever ye shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your †liberality unto Jerusalem. †Or, gift

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe thorow Macedonia: (for I do passe thorow Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, that I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost.

9 For a great door, and effectuall is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come to you, with the brethren, but his will was not at all

30 And why stand we in jeopardie every houre?

|| Some read our. || your, to speak after the manner of men.

31 I protest by || your rejoycing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If || after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: evill communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sin not: for some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest, is not quickned except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that bodie that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sowen in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in dishonour, it is raised in glorie: it is sowen in weakenesse, it is raised in power.

44 It is sown a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall bodie. There is a naturall bodie, and there is a spirituall bodie.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickning spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.

47 The first man is of the earth earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy, and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye, at the last trumpe, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed).

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed up in victory. *Hosea 13.14.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O || grave, where is thy victory? ||or, hell.

56 The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The brethrens wants must be releeved. 10 Timothie commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 16 Salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever ye shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your †liberality unto Jerusalem. †Gr. gift

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe thorow Macedonia: (for I do passe thorow Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, that I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus untill Pentecost.

9 For a great door, and effectuall is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come to you, with the brethren, but his will was not at all

to come at this time: but he will come when he ſhall have conuenient time.

13 Watch ye, ſtand faſt in the faith, quit you like men, be ſtrong.

14 Let all your things be done with charitie.

15 I beſeech you, brethren, (ye know the houſe of Stephanas, that it is the firſt fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themſelues to the miniſtery of the ſaints)

16 That ye ſubmit your ſelues unto ſuch, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have ſupplied.

18 For they have refreſhed my ſpirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are ſuch.

19 The churches of Aſia ſalute you: Aquila and Priſcilla ſalute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their houſe.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kiſſe.

21 The ſalutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, let him be Anathema, Maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen.

¶ The firſt epiſtle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanas, and Fortunatus and Achaicus and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAUL the apoſtle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 The apoſtle encourageth them againſt troubles, 13 and ſheweth the ſinceritie of his preaching, 15 excuſeth his not coming unto them.

PAul an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the ſaints which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 Bleſſed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which ‖ is effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

‖ Or, is wrought

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

9 But we had the ‖ sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

‖ Or, answer.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us:

11 You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie, and godly sinceritie, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, then what you read or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As also you have knowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as ye also are ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second ‖ benefit:

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

‖ Or, grace.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our ‖ word toward you was not yea and nay.

‖ Or, preaching.

19 For the Son of God Jesus Christ who was preached among you by us, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea, and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now

21 Now he which stablisheth us with you, in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God.

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 The reason of his not coming. 6 Of the excommunicate person. 12 Paul cometh to Troas: 13 from thence to Macedonia. 14 The successe of his preaching in every place.

BUt I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heavinesse.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many teares, not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this ‖ punishment, which was inflicted of many.

‖ Or, censure.

7 So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that ye would confirm your love towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it, ‖ in the person of Christ;

‖ Or, in the sight

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christs gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God which alwayes causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the savour of death unto death, and to the other, the savour of life unto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many which ‖ corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

‖ Or, deal deceitfully with.

CHAP. III.

1 The commendation of Pauls ministerie. 6 A comparison between the ministers of the law and the gospel.

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men.

3 For as much as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ, ministred by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshie tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward.

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to think any thing as of our selves: but our sufficiency is of God.

6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit ‖ giveth life.

7 But if the ministration of death written and ingraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glorie of his countenance, which glorie was to be done away:

‖ Or, quickneth

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glorie, much more doth the ministration of righteousnesse exceed in glorie.

10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glorie in this respect, by reason of the glorie that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

‖ Or, boldnesse.

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great ‖ plainnesse of speech.

13 And not as Moses which put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished.

14 But their mindes were blinded: for untill this day remaineth the same vail untaken away, in the reading of the old Testament: which vail is done away in Christ.

15 But

15 But even unto this day, when Moſes is read, the vaile is vpon their heart.

16 Nevertheleſſe when it ſhall turn to the Lord, the vaile ſhall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberti.

‖Or, of the Lord the ſpirit.

18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glaſſe the glory of the Lord, are changed into the ſame image, from glory to glory, even as ‖ by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls ſinceritie and diligence in preaching, 7 and of the troubles of the ſame.

THerefore ſeeing we have this miniſterie, as we have receiued mercie we faint not,

† Gr. ſhame.

2 But have renounced the hidden things of † diſhoneſty, not walking in craftineſſe, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifeſtation of the truth, commending our ſelues to every mans conſcience in the ſight of God.

3 But if our goſpel be hid, it is hid to them that are loſt.

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the mindes of them which beleeue not, leſt the light of the glorious goſpel of Chriſt, who is the image of God, ſhould ſhine vnto them.

5 For we preach not our ſelues, but Chriſt Ieſus the Lord, and our ſelues your ſeruants for Ieſus ſake.

6 For God who commanded the light to ſhine out of darkneſſe, hath ſhined in our hearts, to giue the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Ieſus Chriſt.

7 But we haue this treaſure in earthen veſſels, that the excellencie of the power may be of God and not of vs.

8 We are troubled on every ſide, yet not diſtreſſed; we are perplexed, but ‖ not in deſpair;

‖Or not altogether without help or means.

9 Perſecuted, but not forſaken; caſt down, but not deſtroyed;

10 Alwayes bearing about in the bodie the dying of the Lord Ieſus, that the life alſo of Ieſus might be made manifeſt in our bodie.

11 For we which liue, are alway delivered vnto death for Ieſus ſake, that the life alſo of Ieſus might be made manifeſt in our mortall fleſh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life in you.

13 We having the ſame ſpirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeved, and therefore haue I ſpoken: we alſo beleeve, and therefore ſpeak,

* Pſal. 116. 10.

14 Knowing, that he which raiſed vp the Lord Ieſus, ſhall raiſe vp vs alſo by Ieſus, and ſhall preſent vs with you.

15 For all things are for your ſakes, that the abundant grace, might through the thankſgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternall weight of glorie,

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen, are temporall; but the things which are not seen, are eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 That in hope of immortall glorie. 9 and in expectance of it, and the generall judgement, he laboureth to keep a good conscience.

FOr we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternall in the heavens.

2 For in this we grone earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven.

3 If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in this tabernacle do grone, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the self same thing, is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alwayes confident, knowing that whilest we are at home in the bodie, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight)

8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we ‖ labour, that whether present or absent we may be accepted of him. ‖ Or, endeavour.

10 For we must all appear before the judgement seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perswade men: but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat to answer them which glory † in appearance, and not in heart. † Gr. in the face.

13 For whether we be beside our selves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the Love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead.

15 And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

16 Where-

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, ‖ he is a new creature: *old things are past away, behold, all things are become new.

‖Or, let him be

*Isaiah 43.19. Revel. 21.5.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministerie of reconciliation,

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them, and hath † committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

† Greek, put in us

20 Now then we are ambassadours for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us; we pray you in Christs stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of Pauls faithfulnesse in the ministerie. 14 Exhortations to avoid idolaters.

WE then as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, *I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in a day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time: behold, now is the day of salvation)

*Isaiah 49.8.

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministerie be not blamed.

4 But in all things † approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

† Greek, commanding.

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, ‖ in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

‖ Or, in toslings to and fro.

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the holy Ghost, by love unfained,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse, on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report, and good report: as deceivers, and yet true:

9 As unknown, and yet well known, as dying, and behold, we live: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway rejoycing: as poor, yet making many rich: as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitned in us, but ye are straitned in your own bowels.

13 Now

13 Now for a recompence in the same, (I speake as unto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelevers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with unrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeveth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, * I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you,

18 * And will be a father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

* Levit. 26. 12.

* Isaiah 52. 11.

* Jere. 31. 1.

CHAP. VII.

1 He exhorteth to puritie, 3 and sheweth what comfort he took in his affliction.

HAving therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the feare of God.

2 Receive us, we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemn you: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus.

7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me, so that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent; for I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry ||after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

||Or, according to God.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For

11 For behold, this ſelf-ſame thing that ye ſorrowed after a godly ſort, what carefulneſſe it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your ſelves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement deſire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge, in all things ye have approved your ſelves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cauſe that had done the wrong, nor for his cauſe that ſuffered wrong, but that our care for you in the ſight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, becauſe his ſpirit was refreſhed by you all.

14 For if I have boaſted any thing to him of you, I am not aſhamed; but as we ſpake all things to you in truth, even ſo our boaſting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whileſt he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him.

†Gr. bowels.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He ſtirreth them up to contribute to the ſaints, 16 and commendeth Titus and others, who were come to them purpoſely for this buſineſſe.

MOreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God beſtowed on the churches of Macedonia:

2 how that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberalitie.

3 For to their power (I bear record) yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themſelves:

4 Praying us with much intreatie, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowſhip of the miniſtring to the ſaints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but firſt gave their own ſelves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Inſomuch that we deſired Titus, that as he had begun, ſo he would alſo finiſh in you the ſame grace alſo.

7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us, ſee that ye abound in this grace alſo.

8 I ſpeak not by commandment, but by occaſion of the forwardneſſe of others, and to prove the ſincerite of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that though he was rich, yet for your ſakes he became poor, that ye through his poverte might be rich.

10 And

10 And herein I give my advice, for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be † forward a yeer ago.

† Greek, willing.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it, that as there was a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and you burdned:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want, that there may be equality:

15 As it is written, He * that had gathered much, had nothing over, and he that had gathered little had no lack.

* Exod. 16. 18.

16 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed, he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throughout all the churches.

19 And not that onely, but who was also chosen of the churches to travell with us with this ‖ grace which is administred by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready minde.

‖ Or, gift.

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administred by us:

21 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have often times proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which ‖ I have in you.

‖ Or, he hath.

23 Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth why he sent Titus, 6 and stirreth them up to a bountifull almes, 10 which shall yeeld them a great increase.

FOr as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeer ago, and your zeal hath provoked very many:

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf, that, as I said, ye may be ready.

4 Leſt haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you unprepared, we (that we ſay not, you) ſhould be aſhamed in this ſame confident boaſting.

5 Therefore I thought it neceſſary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up before hand your † bounty, || whereof ye had notice before, that the ſame might be ready as a matter of bounty, not of covetouſneſſe.

6 But this I ſay; He which ſoweth ſparingly, ſhall reap ſparingly: and he which ſoweth bountifully, ſhall reap bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purpoſeth in his heart, ſo let him give: not grudgingly, or of neceſſity: for * God loveth a cheerfull giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye alwayes having all ſufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.

9 (As it is written, * He hath diſperſed abroad: he hath given to the poor: his righteouſneſſe remaineth for ever.

10 Now he that * miniſtreth ſeed to the ſower, both miniſter bread for your food, and multiply your ſeed ſown, and increaſe the fruits of your righteouſneſſe.)

11 Being inriched in every thing to all bountifulneſſe, which cauſeth through us thankſgiving to God.

12 For the adminiſtration of this ſervice not onely ſupplieth the want of the ſaints, but is abundant alſo by many thankſgivings unto God.

13 Whiles by the experiment of this miniſtration they glorifie God for your profeſſed ſubjection unto the goſpel of Chriſt, and for your liberall diſtribution unto them, and unto all men:

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unſpeakable gift.

† Gr. bleſſing.

|| Or, which hath been ſo much ſpoken of before.

* Prov. 11.25. Rom. 12 8. eccluſ. 35.9.

* Pſal. 112.9.

* Iſaiah 55.10.

CHAP. X.

1 Pauls ſpirituall might and authority againſt all adverſaries, 7 as well when he is preſent as abſent. 14 Not to reach beyond our compaſſe.

NOw I Paul my ſelf beſeech you by the meekneſſe and gentleneſſe of Chriſt, who || in preſence am baſe among you, but being abſent am bold toward you.

2 But I beſeech you, that I may not be bold when I am preſent, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold againſt ſome which || think of us, as if we walked according to the fleſh.

3 For though we walk in the fleſh, we do not war after the fleſh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty || through God to the pulling down of ſtrong holds)

|| Or, in outward appearance.

|| Or, reckon.

|| Or, to God.

5 Caſting

5 Casting down ‖ imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ:

‖ Or, reasonings.

6 And having in a readinesse to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself, that he is Christs, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and powerfull, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we be also in deed when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves, ‖ are not wise.

‖ Or, understand it not.

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the ‖ rule, which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

‖ Or, line.

14 For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you, for we are come as far as to you also, in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours, but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be ‖ enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

‖ Or, magnified in you.

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans ‖ line of things made ready to our hand.

‖ Or, rule. Jer. 9.24.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

* 1 Cor. 1.31.

18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

3 Paul being inforced, entreth into a commendation of himself, and comparison with the other apostles.

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly, and indeed ‖ bear with me.

‖ Or, you do bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousie, for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve

though his subtiltie, so your mindes should be corrupted from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Iesus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5 For I suppose I was not a whit behinde the very chiefest apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge, but we have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abasing my self that you might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them to do you service.

9 And when I was present with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied, and in all things I have kept my self from being burdensome to you, and so will I keep my self.

† Greek, this boasting shall not be stopped in me.

10 As the truth of Christ is in me, † no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I love you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glorie, they may be found even as we.

13 For such are false apostles, deceitfull workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

14 And no marvell, for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousnesse, whose end shall be according to their works.

‖ Or, suffer.

16 I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool ‖ receive me, that I may boast my self a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye your selves are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit wherein soever any is bold, I speak foolishly, I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrews? so am I: are they Israelites? so am I: are they the seed of Abraham? so am I:

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speak as a fool, I am more;

more: in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure: in prisons more frequent: in deaths oft.

24 Of the Iews five times received I * fourty stripes, save one. * Deut. 25.3.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwrack: a night and a day I have been in the deep;

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrey men, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In wearinesse and painfulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse.

28 Besides those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glorie of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the governour under Aretas the king, kept the city with a garison, desirous to apprehend me,

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

5 He commendeth his apostleship not by his revelations, but by his infirmities, blaming them for forcing this boasting.

IT is not expedient for me doubtlesse to glorie, I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen yeers ago, (whether in the bodie, I cannot tell, or whether out of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the bodie, or out of the bodie, I cannot tell, God knoweth)

4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not || lawfull for a man to utter. || Or, possible.

5 Of such an one will I glorie, yet of my self I will not glorie, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glorie, I shall not be a fool: for I will say the truth. But now I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me:

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. * See Ezek. 28.24.

8 For this thing I beſought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he ſaid unto me, My grace is ſufficient for thee: for my ſtrength is made perfect in weakneſſe. Moſt gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Chriſt may reſt upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleaſure in infirmities, in reproaches, in neceſſities, in perſecutions, in diſtreſſes for Chriſts ſake: for when I am weak, then am I ſtrong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behinde the very chiefeſt apoſtles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the ſignes of an apoſtle were wrought among you in all patience, in ſignes, and wonders, and mightie deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other churches, except it be that I my ſelf was not burdenſome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdenſome to you; for I ſeek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly ſpend and be ſpent for †you, though the more abundantly I love you, the leſſe I be loved. † Gr. your ſouls.

16 But be it ſo, I did not burden you: nevertheleſſe, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I ſent unto you?

18 I deſired Titus, and with him I ſent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the ſame ſpirit? walked we not in the ſame ſteps?

19 Again, think you that we excuſe our ſelves unto you? we ſpeak before God in Chriſt: but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear leſt when I come I ſhall not finde you ſuch as I would, and that I ſhall be found unto you ſuch as ye would not, leſt there be debates, envyings, wraths, ſtrifes, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, tumults,

21 And leſt when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I ſhall bewail many which have ſinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanneſſe, and fornication, and laſciviouſneſſe, which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He threatneth obſtinate ſinners. 5 He adviſeth to the triall of their faith.

This is the third time I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall every word be eſtabliſhed.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were preſent the ſecond time, and being abſent, now I write to them which here-

heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again, I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: for we also are weak || in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you. ||Or, with him.

5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith: prove your own selves: know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shal know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil, not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should use sharpness, according to ỹ power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect: Be of good comfort, be of one minde, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, & the love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL the apostle to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 He wondreth that they have so soon left him and the gospel, which he learned not of men, but of God.

PAul an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evill world, according to the will of God, and our Father:

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
6 I marvell that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:
7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.
8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.
9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you, than that ye have received, let him be accursed.
10 For do I now perswade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.
11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.
12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.
13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it:
14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my † equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.
15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers womb, and called me by his grace,
16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediatly I conferred not with flesh and blood:
17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.
18 Then after three yeers I ‖went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen dayes.
19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.
20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.
21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria, and Cilicia,
22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ.
23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.
24 And they glorified God in me.

† Greek, equals in yeers.

‖Or, returned.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth when he went again to Jerusalem, and why. 14 Of justification by faith, and not by works. 20 They that are so justified, live not in sin.

THen fourteen yeers after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but ‖ privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

‖ Or, severally.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our liberty, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an hour, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to be somewhat, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Only they would that we should remember the poor, the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles, but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressour.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang on the law. 6 They that beleeve, are justified, and blessed with Abraham.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

‖ Or, so great. 4 Have ye ‖ suffered so many things in vain if it be yet in vain.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

‖ Or, imputed. 6 Even as Abraham beleeved God, and it was ‖ accounted to him for righteousnesse.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justifie the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, * In thee shall all nations be blessed.

* Gene. 12.3.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

* Deut. 27.26.

11 But

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, * The just shall live by faith.

12 And the law is not of faith: but * the man that doth them shall live in them.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, * Cursed is every one that hangeth on tree:

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ: that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men: though it be but a mans ‖ covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed which is Christ.

17 And this I say, That the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirtie yeers after, cannot disannull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediatour.

20 Now a mediatour is not a mediatour of one, but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousnesse should have been by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should after ward be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

* Hab. 2.4. Rom. 1.17.

* Levit. 18.5.

* Deut. 21.23.

‖ Or, testament.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were under the law till Christ came. 5 But Christ freed us
22 We are the sons of Abraham by the free-woman.

NOw I say, that the heir, as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all,
2 But is under tutours and governours, untill the time appointed of the father.
3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage
‖Or, rudiments. under the ‖ elements of the world:
4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the law,
5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.
6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying Abba, father.
7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.
8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.
9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye ‖again to the weak and beggerly
‖Or, back ‖Or, rudiments. ‖ elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?
10 Ye observe dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeers.
11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.
12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are, ye have not injured me at all.
13 Ye know how through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you at the first.
14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.
‖Or, what was then 15 ‖ Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.
16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?
‖Or, us. 17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude ‖ you, that you might affect them.
18 But it is good to be zealously affected alwayes in a good thing, and not only when I am present you.
19 My little children, of whom I travell in birth again untill Christ be formed in you.
‖Or, I am perplexed for you. 20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for ‖ I stand in doubt of you.
21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

22 For

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.
23 But he who was of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman was by promise.
24 Which things are an allegorie: for these are the two ‖covenants: the one from the mount Sinai, which gendreth to bondage, which is Agar.
25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and ‖answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.
26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the mother of us all.
27 For it is written, * Rejoyce thou barren that bearest not, break forth and cry thou that travellest not: for the desolate hath many more children then she which hath an husband.
28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.
29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.
30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? * Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.
31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

‖Or, testaments.
‖Or, is in the same rank.
* Isaiah 54. 1.
* Gen. 21. 10.

CHAP. V.

2 He moveth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to observe circumcision: 13 but rather love. 19 The works of the flesh. 22 The fruits of the Spirit.

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.
2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.
3 For I testifie again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtour to do the whole law.
4 Christ is become of none effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace.
5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousnesse by faith.
6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.
7 Ye did run well, ‖ who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?
8 This perswasion cometh not of him that calleth you.
9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.
10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded, but he that troubleth you shall bear his judgement, whosoever he be.

‖Or, who did drive you back?

11 And

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the crosse ceased.
12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.
13 For brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; onely use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.
14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.
15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.
16 This I say then, Walk in the spirit, and ‖ ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.
17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.
18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.
19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,
20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,
21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shal not inherit the kingdom of God.
22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,
23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.
24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh, with the ‖ affections and lusts.
25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.
26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

* Levit. 19. 18. Matth. 22. 39.
‖ Or, fulfill not.
‖ Or, passions.

CHAP. VI.

1 He willeth them to deal mildely with a brother that slippeth, 6 to be liberall to their teachers, 9 and not to be weary of well doing.

BRethren, ‖ if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spirituall, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness, considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.
2 Bear ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.
3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.
4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.
5 For every man shall bear his own burden.
6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.

‖ Or, although.

7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As we have therefore opportunitie, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the houshold of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised: onely lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law, but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glorie in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glorie save in the crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ, || by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. || or, whereby

15 For in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercie, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me: for I bear in my bodie the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apostle to the EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

4 Of Election, and adoption, which is the fountain of our salvation.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in
‖Or, things. heavenly ‖ places in Christ:
4 According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:
5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will:
6 To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.
7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgivenesse of sins: according to the riches of his grace,
8 Wherein he hath abounded towards us in all wisdom and prudence:
9 Having made known unto us the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself.
10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which
†Greek, the heavens. are in † heaven, and which are on earth, even in him:
11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him, who worketh all things after the counsell of his own will:
12 That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first
‖Or, hoped. trusted in Christ.
13 In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,
14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glorie.
15 Wherefore, I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,
16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,
17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, ‖ in the knowledge of him:
‖Or, for the acknowledgement, † Gr. of the might of his power.
18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightned: that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glorie of his inheritance in the saints:
19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working † of his mighty power:
20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

21 Far

21 Far above all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:
22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,
23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 What we were 3 by nature, and what we are 5 by grace.
10 We are created to good works.

AND you hath he quickned who were dead in trespasses and sins,
2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.
3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling †the desires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath even as others. †Or, the wills.
4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,
5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickned us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)
6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.
7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindnesse towards us, through Christ Jesus.
8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of your selves: it is the gift of God:
9 Not of works, lest any man should boast:
10 For we are his workmanship created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ‖ ordained that we should walk in them. ‖Or, prepared.
11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands,
12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.
13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us:
15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments, contained in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, so making peace.

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the crosse having slain the enmity ‖ thereby:

‖Or, in himself.

17 And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have an accesse by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the houshold of God;

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himselfe being the chief corner stone,

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mysterie. 6 That the Gentiles should be saved 9 This was Paul to teach.

FOr this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you-ward:

3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, (as I wrote ‖ afore in few words,

‖Or, a little before

4 Whereby when ye read ye may understand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the gospel:

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectuall working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am lesse then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ:

9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mysterie, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

12 In whom we have boldnesse and accesse with confidence by the faith of him.

13 Where-

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heaven & earth is named,

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man:

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to unitie, 24 to put on the new man, 25 to cast off lying, 29 and corrupt communication.

I Therefore the prisoner || of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

|| Or, in the Lord.

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love.

3 Endeavouring to keep the unitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptisme,

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, * When he ascended up on high, he led || captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

* Psal. 68. 18.

|| Or, a multitude of captives.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might || fill all things.)

|| Or, fulfill.

11 * And he gave some apostles: and some prophets: and some evangelists: and some pastours and teachers;

* 1. Cor. 12. 28.

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the worke of the ministery, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come || in the unitie of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the || stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

|| Or, into the unity. || Or, age.

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every winde of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinesse, whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

15 But ‖ speaking the truth in love may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

‖ Or, being sincere.

16 * From whom the whole bodie fitly joyned together, and compacted by that which every joynt supplieth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love.

* Col. 2. 19.

17 This I say therefore, and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their minde,

18 Having the understanding darkned, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the * ‖ blindnesse of their heart:

* Rom. 1. 21.

‖ Or, hardnesse.

19 Who being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousnesse, to work all uncleanness with greedinesse.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus.

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde:

24 And that ye put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousnesse, and ‖ true holinesse.

‖ Or, holinesse of truth.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry and sin not, let not the sun go down upon your wrath:

27 Neither give place to the devill.

28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have ‖ to give to him that needeth.

‖ Or, to distribute.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good ‖ to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

‖ Or, to edifie profitably.

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice.

32 * And be ye kinde one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake hath forgiven you.

* 2. Cor. 2, 10.

CHAP. V.

2 He exhorteth to love, to flee fornication, 4 and uncleanness, 15 to walk warily. 22 The duties of wives, 25 and of husbands.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as deare children,

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and

hath

hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God, for a sweet smelling savour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints:

4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of ‖ disobedience.

‖ Or, unbelief.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are ‖ reproved, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.

‖ Or, discovered.

14 Wherefore he saith, * Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

* Isaiah. 60. 1.

15 * See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

* Colos. 4. 5.

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are evill.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunk with wine wherein is excesse: but be filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selves in psalms, and hymns, and spirituall songs, singing and making melodie in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ,

21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of God

22 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:

26 That he might sanctifie, and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife, & they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself, and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The dutie of children, 5 and servants. 10 Our life is a warfare. 14 The christian armour.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right,

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters, according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as unto Christ:

6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men.

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters do the same things unto them, || forbearing threatning: knowing that || your master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devill.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh & blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darknes of this world, against || spirituall wickednesse in || high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and || having done all to stand.

14 Stand

|| Or, moderating.

|| Some read, both your and their master.

|| Or, wicked spirits.

|| Or, heavenly

|| Or, having overcome all.

14 Stand therefore, having your loyns girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousnesse:
15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.
16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.
17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.
18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints,
19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mysterie of the gospel:
20 For which I am an ambassadour ‖ in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak. ‖ Or, in a chain.
21 But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things. ‖ Or, thereof.
22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.
23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ ‖ in sincerity. Amen. ‖ Or, with incorruption.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL the apostle to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls thanksgiving to God for them. 9 and his prayer for them. 12 The fruit of Pauls troubles. 21 His readinesse to suffer.

PAul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:
2 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 I thank my God upon every ‖ remembrance of you, ‖ Or, mention.
4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy.

5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now:

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, || will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ,

|| Or, will finish it.

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because || I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence, and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are || partakers of my grace.

|| Or, you have me in your heart,

|| Or, partakers with me

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all || judgement:

of grace.

10 That ye may || approve things that are || excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ:

|| Or, sense

|| Or, try.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

|| Or, differ.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel.

13 So that my bonds || in Christ are manifest in all || the palace, and || in all other places.

|| Or, for Christ.

|| Or, Cesars court.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envie, and strife, and some also of good will.

|| Or, to all others.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then: Notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached, and I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldnesse, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall chuse, I wot not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ, which is far better:

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh is more needfull for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance & joy of faith.

26 That

26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striving together for the faith of the gospel;

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not onely to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake,

30 having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

CHAP. II.

a He exhorteth to unitie and humilitie, 12 and to a carefull proceeding in the way of salvation.

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one minde.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vain glorie, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteem other better then themselves.

4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not robberie to be equall with God:

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the ||likenesse of men. ||Or, habite.

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a Name which is above every name:

10 That at the Name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth:

11 And that every tongue should confesse that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

14 Do all things without murmurings and disputings:
15 That ye may be blameless, and ‖ harmless, the sons of God without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ‖ ye shine as lights in the world:
16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may rejoyce in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.
17 Yea, and if I be † offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all.
18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoyce with me.
19 ‖ But I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.
20 For I have no man ‖ like minded, who will naturally care for your state.
21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christs.
22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.
23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.
24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my self shall come shortly.
25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.
26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heavinesse, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.
27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.
28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the lesse sorrowfull.
29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and ‖ hold such in reputation:
30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

‖ Or, sincere.
‖ Or, shine ye.
† Greek, poured forth.
‖ Or, moreover.
‖ Or, so dear unto me.
‖ Or, honour such.

CHAP. III.

1 He warneth them of false teachers. 15 He exhorteth them 17 to imitate him, 18 and to decline the wayes of carnall Christians.

FInally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.
2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

5 Circumcised the eighth day of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews: as touching the law a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church: touching the righteousnesse which is the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellencie of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ.

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousnesse, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death,

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I presse toward the mark, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, wherunto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us minde the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who minde earthly things)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

21 Who

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

CHAP. IIII.

4 Generall exhortations. 10 His joy for their liberalitie toward him, and grace in them.

Therefore my brethren, dearly beloved, and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway, and again I say, Rejoyce.

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and mindes through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are || honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report: if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

|| Or, venerable.

9 Those things which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me || hath flourished again, wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

|| Or, is revived.

11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed both to be full, and to be hungry, both to abound, & to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

16 For

16 For even in Theſſalonica ye ſent once and again unto my neceſſitie.

17 Not becauſe I deſire a gift: but I deſire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But ‖ I have all, and abound, I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were ſent from you, an odour of a ſweet ſmell, a ſacrifice acceptable, well pleaſing to God. ‖Or, I have received all.

19 But my God ſhall ſupply all your need according to his riches in glory by Chriſt Jeſus.

20 Now unto God and our Father be glorie for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute every ſaint in Chriſt Jeſus: the brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the ſaints ſalute you, chiefly they that are of Cæſars houſhold.

23 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apoſtle to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He thanketh God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their increaſe in grace: 14 and deſcribeth the true Chriſt.

PAul an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To the ſaints and faithfull brethren in Chriſt which are at Coloſſe, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, praying alwayes for you:

4 Since we heard of your faith in Chriſt Jeſus, and of the love which ye have to all the ſaints;

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the goſpel:

6 Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth alſo in you, ſince the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.

7 As

7 As ye alſo learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-ſervant, who is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:
8 Who alſo declared unto us your love in the Spirit.
9 For this cause we alſo, ſince the day we heard it, do not ceale to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spirituall understanding.
10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitfull in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God:
11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long ſuffering with joyfulneſſe:
12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the ſaints in light:
13 Who hath deliuered us from the power of darkneſſe, and hath translated us into the kingdom of † his dear Son.
14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveneſſe of ſins:
15 Who is the image of the inviſible God, the firſt-borne of every creature.
16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, viſible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.
17 *And he is before all things, & by him all things conſiſt.
18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firſt-borne from the dead, that ‖ in all things he might have the preeminence.
19 For it pleaſed the Father, that in him ſhould all fulneſſe dwell,
20 And (‖ having made peace through the blood of his croſſe) by him to reconcile all things unto himſelf, by him, I ſay, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.
21 And you that were ſometime alienated, and enemies ‖ in your minde by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,
22 In the body of his fleſh through death, to preſent you holy and unblameable, and unreproveable in his ſight:
23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and ſetled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a miniſter.
24 Who now rejoyce in my ſufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my fleſh, for his bodies ſake, which is the church.
25 Whereof I am made a miniſter according to the diſpenſation of God, which is given to me for you, ‖ to fulfill the word of God:
26 Even the myſterie which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifeſt to his ſaints.

† Or, the Son of his love.

* 1 Cor. 8.6. Joh. 1.3.

‖ Or, among all

‖ Or, making peace.

‖ Or, by your minde in wicked works.

‖ Or fully to preach the word of God. Rom. 15.19.

27 To

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this myſterie among the Gentiles, which is Chriſt ‖ in you, the hope of glory.

‖Or, among you.

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wiſdom, that we may preſent every man perfect in Chriſt Jeſus.

29 Whereunto I alſo labour: ſtriving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to be conſtant in Chriſt, 8 to beware of philoſophie, and vain traditions, 18 worſhipping of angels, 20 and legall ceremonies.

FOr I would that ye knew what great ‖ conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not ſeen my face in the fleſh.

‖Or, fear, or, care

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full aſſurance of underſtanding, to the acknowledgement of the myſtery of God, and of the Father, and of Chriſt:

3 ‖In whom are hid all the treaſures of wiſdom and knowledge.

‖Or, wherein.

4 And this I ſay, leſt any man ſhould beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be abſent in the fleſh, yet am I with you in the ſpirit, joying and beholding your order, and the ſtedfaſtneſſe of your faith in Chriſt.

6 As ye have therefore received Chriſt Jeſus the Lord, ſo walk ye in him:

7 Rooted and built up in him, and ſtabliſhed in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thankſgiving.

8 Beware leſt any man ſpoil you through philoſophie and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ‖ rudiments of the world, and not after Chriſt:

‖Or, elements.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulneſſe of the God-head bodily.

10 And ye are compleat in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power.

11 In whom alſo ye are circumciſed with the circumciſion made without hands, in putting off the body of the ſins of the fleſh, by the circumciſion of Chriſt:

12 Buried with him in baptiſme, wherein alſo ye are riſen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raiſed him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your ſins, and the uncircumciſion of your fleſh, hath he quickned together with him, having forgiven you all treſpaſſes,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances, that was

was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his crosse:

15 And having spoiled principalities and powers: he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them ‖ in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you ‖ in meat or in drink, or ‖ in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath dayes:

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man ‖ beguile you of your reward, † in a voluntary humilitie, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puft up by his fleshly minde:

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ‖ rudiments of the world: why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men.

23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship and humility, and ‖ neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

‖Or, in himself.
‖Or, for eating & drinking
‖Or, in part.
‖Or, judge against you.
†Gr. being a voluntary in humilitie.
‖Or, elements.
‖Or, punishing, or, not, sparing.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ. 5 He exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ. 12 and to sundry other duties.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your ‖ affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

‖Or, minde.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is idolatry:

6 For which things sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds

10 And

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek, nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free, but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindenesse, humblenesse of minde, meeknesse, long-suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any, even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

† Gr. complaint.

14 And above all these things, put on charitie, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one bodie: and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God, and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eye-service, as men pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God.

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to fervency in prayer, 5 and to walk wisely towards them that do not yet know Christ.

MAsters, give unto your servants that which is just and equall, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving:

3 Withall, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a doore of utterance, to speak the mysterie of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.
5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time.
6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how ye ought to answer every man.
7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:
8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts:
9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.
10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters son to Barnabas (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him)
11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.
12 Epaphras who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always || labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and || compleat in all the will of God.
13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.
14 Luke the beloved physician, and Demas greet you.
15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.
16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.
17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministerie which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.
18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

|| Or, striving.
|| Or, filled.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE of PAUL the apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 He sheweth his mindefulnesse of them in his thanksgiving, and prayers, and perswasion of their sincere faith and conversion.

PAul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word onely: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleeve in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia, and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God,

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 How the gospel was preached unto them, and how they received it. 18 Why he was so long absent, and why he was desirous to see them.

FOr your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

for, beloved of God, your election.

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully intreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness, God is witness.

6 Nor of men sought we glorie, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have ||been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

||Or, used authoritie.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God onely, but also our own lives, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travell: for labouring night & day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that believe.

11 As ye know how we exhorted, and comforted, and charged every one of you, (as a father doth his children)

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glorie.

13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the word of God, which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countreymen, even as they have of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have ||persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

||Or, chased us out.

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time in presence, not in heart, indeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again: but Satan hindred us.

19 For

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of || reioycing? Or glo-
are not even ye in the preſence of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt at rying.
his coming?

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP. III.

1 Of Pauls ſending Timothie unto them: 7 His joy for them
10 His deſire to ſee them.

WHerefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And ſent Timotheus our brother and miniſter of God, and our fellow labourer in the goſpel of Chriſt, to eſtabliſh you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man ſhould be moved by theſe afflictions: for your ſelves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we told you before that we ſhould ſuffer tribulation, even as it came to paſſe, and ye know.

5 For this cauſe when I could no longer forbear, I ſent to know your faith, leſt by ſome meanes the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us alwayes, deſiring greatly to ſee us, as we alſo to ſee you:

7 Therefore brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and diſtreſſe by your faith:

8 For now we *live, if ye ſtand faſt in the Lord. * Rom.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, 7.9.
for all the joy wherewith we joy for your ſakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly, that we might ſee your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himſelf and our Father, and our Lord Jeſus Chriſt || direct our way unto you. ||Or, guide.

12 And the Lord make you to increaſe and abound in love one toward another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you:

13 To the end he may ſtabliſh your hearts unblameable in holineſſe before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt with all his ſaints.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to godlineſſe, 6 to holineſſe, 9 to love,
11 to quietneſſe, 12 to moderate ſorrow for the dead. 17 Of
the reſurrection, and the laſt judgement.

FUrthermore then we || beſeech you, brethren, and || exhort you by the Lord Jeſus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk, and to pleaſe God, ſo ye would abound more and more. ||Or, requeſt. ||Or, beſeech.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to possesse his vessell in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That no man go beyond and || defraud his brother || in any matter, because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holinesse.

8 He therefore that || despiseth, despiseth not man but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye your selves are taught of God to love one another.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own businesse, and to worke with your own hands (as we commanded you)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack || of nothing.

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

14 For if we beleeve that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the aire: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore || comfort one another with these words.

|| Or, oppresse, or, overreach.

|| Or, in the matter.

|| Or, rejecteth.

|| Or, of no man.

|| Or, exhort.

CHAP. V.

1 He sheweth of Christs second coming to judgement. 16 And giveth divers precepts, 23 and so concludeth.

BUt of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

2 For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safetie: then sudden destruction

deſtruction cometh upon them, as travell upon a woman with childe, and they ſhall not eſcape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkneſſe, that that day ſhould overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkneſſe.

6 Therefore let us not ſleep, as do others, but let us watch and be ſober.

7 For they that ſleep, ſleep in the night, and they that be drunken are drunken in the night.

8 But let us who are of the day, be ſober, putting on the breaſt-plate of faith and love, and for an helmet, the hope of ſalvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath: but to obtain ſalvation by our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,

10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or ſleep, we ſhould live together with him.

11 Wherefore || comfort your ſelves together, and edifie one another, even as alſo ye do. ||Or, exhort.

12 And we beſeech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonith you;

13 And to eſteem them very highly in love for their works ſake. And be at peace among your ſelves.

14 Now we || exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, ſupport the weak, be patient toward all men. ||Or, beſeech. ||Or, diſorderly.

15 See that none render evill for evill unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your ſelves, and to all men.

16 Rejoyce evermore.

17 Pray without ceaſing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Chriſt Jeſus concerning you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Deſpiſe not prophecyings.

21 Prove all things: hold faſt that which is good.

22 Abſtain from all appearance of evill.

23 And the very God of peace ſanctifie you wholly: and I pray God your whole ſpirit and ſoul and bodie be preſerved blameleſſe unto the comming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

24 Faithfull is he that calleth you, who alſo will do it.

25 Brethren, pray for us.

26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kiſſe.

27 I || charge you by the Lord, that this epiſtle be read unto all the holy brethren. ||Or, adjure.

28 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt be with you. Amen.

¶ The firſt epiſtle unto the Theſſalonians was written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAUL the apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 He sheweth the good opinion of their faith, love, and patience,
11 and comforteth them against persecutions.

PAul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charitie of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth.

4 So that we our selves glorie in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions, and tribulations that ye endure.

5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer.

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with † his mighty angels,

† Or, the angels of his power.

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glorie of his power:

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimonie among you was believed) in that day.

11 Wherefore also we pray alwayes for you, that our God would ‖ count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the work of faith with power.

‖ Or, vouchsafe.

12 That the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to continue ſtedfaſt, 3 ſheweth them there ſhall be a departure from the faith, 9 and a diſcoverie of Antichriſt before the day of the Lord come.

NOw we beſeech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and by our gathering together unto him,
2 That ye be not ſoon ſhaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by ſpirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Chriſt is at hand.
3 Let no man deceive you by any meanes: for that day ſhall not come, except there come a falling away firſt, and that man of ſin be revealed, the ſon of perdition,
4 Who oppoſeth and exalteth himſelf above all that is called God, or that is worſhipped: ſo that he as God ſitteth in the temple of God, ſhewing himſelf that he is God.
5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you theſe things?
6 And now ye know what || withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time. || or, holdeth.
7 For the myſterie of iniquitie doth already work: only he who now letteth, will let, until he be taken out of the way.
8 And then ſhall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord ſhall conſume with the ſpirit of his mouth, and ſhall deſtroy with the brightneſſe of his coming:
9 Even him whoſe coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and ſignes, and lying wonders,
10 And with all deceitfulneſſe of unrighteouſneſſe, in them that periſh; becauſe they received not the love of the truth, that they might be ſaved.
11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtrong delusion, that they ſhould beleeve a lie:
12 That they all might be damned, who beleeved not the truth, but had pleaſure in unrighteouſneſſe.
13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, becauſe God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſalvation, through ſanctification of the Spirit, and beliefe of the truth,
14 Whereunto he called you by our goſpel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
15 Therefore brethren ſtand faſt, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epiſtle.
16 Now our Lord Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlaſting conſolation, and good hope through grace,
17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in every good word and work.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

1 He craveth their prayers, 3 testifieth his confidence of them, 5 prayeth for them, and giveth them divers precepts.

FInally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord † may have free course, and be glorified even as it is with you:

† Gr. may run.

2 And that we may be delivered from † unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

† Gr. absurd.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evill.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into || the patient waiting for Christ.

|| Or, the patience of Christ

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us, for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you.

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought: but wrought with labour and travell night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we have not power, but to make our selves an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busi-bodies.

12 Now them that are such, we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietnesse they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye brethren, || be not weary in well doing.

|| Or, faint not.

14 And if any man obey not our word || by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

|| Or, signifie that man by an epistle.

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always, by all means. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL the apostle to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls charge to Timothie. 6 The end of the law. 12 Of Pauls calling. 20 Of Hymeneus and Alexander.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;

2 Unto Timothie, my own son in the faith: grace, mercie, and peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then godly edifying, which is in faith: so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charitie, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

6 From which some || having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling;

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and prophane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankinde, for men stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministerie,

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly, in unbelief.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

|| Or, not aiming at.

15 This

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercie, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a patern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glorie, for ever and ever, Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, sonne Timothie, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare:

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwrack.

20 Of whom is Hymenæus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 It is meet to pray, and give thanks for all men. 9 Women attire. 12 They are not permitted to teach.

I ‖ Exhort therefore, that first of all supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

‖ Or, desire.

2 For kings, and for all that are in ‖ authoritie, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and honestie.

‖ Or, eminent place.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour:

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour between God and men, the man Christ Jesus,

6 Who gave himself a ransom for all, ‖ to be testified in due time.

‖ Or, a testimony.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobrietie: not with ‖ brayded hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly aray;

‖ Or, plaited.

10 But (which becometh women professing godlinesse) with good works.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurpe authoritie over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childe-bearing, if they continue in faith and charitie, and holinesse with sobrietie.

CHAP. III.

1 Of bishops and deacons, and their wives. 15 Of the church, and the truth therein taught and professed.

This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good worke.

2 A bishop then must be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, ‖ of good behaviour, given to hospitalitie, apt to teach;

‖ Or, modest.

3 ‖ Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

‖ Or, not ready to quarrell, and offer wrong, as one in wine.

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravitie.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)

6 Not ‖ a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devill:

‖ Or, one newly come to the faith

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthie lucre,

9 Holding the mysterie of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved, then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blamelesse.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For they that have ‖ used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldnesse in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

‖ Or, ministred.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ‖ ground of the truth.

‖ Or, stay.

16 And without controversie, great is the mysterie of godlinesse: God was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 That in the latter times shall be a departure from the faith. 6 Paul giveth divers precepts to Timothie.

NOw the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, having their consciences seared with a hot iron:

3 Forbidding to marrie, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse prophane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self rather unto godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth ‖ little, but godlinesse is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

‖ Or, for a little time.

9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation:

10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charitie, in spirit, in faith, in puritie.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecie, with the laying on of the hands of the presbyterie.

15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them, that thy profiting may appear ‖ to all.

‖ Or, in all things.

16 Take heed unto thy self, and unto thy doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thy self, and them that hear thee.

CHAP. V.

1 Rules to be observed in reproving. 3 Of widows. 17 Of elders.

REbuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all puritie.

3 Honour widowes that are widowes indeed.
4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew ‖ pietie at home, and to requite their parents: For that is good and acceptable before God. ‖Or, kindnes.
5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God: and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.
6 But she that liveth ‖ in pleasure, is dead while she liveth. ‖Or, delicately.
7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blamelesse.
8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own ‖ house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidell. ‖Or, kinred.
9 Let not a widow be ‖ taken into the number under threescore yeers old, having been the wife of one man, ‖Or, chosen.
10 Well reported of for good works, if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.
11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry.
12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.
13 And with all they learn to be idle, wandring about from house to house: and not only idle, but tatlers also, and busibodies, speaking things which they ought not.
14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary † to speak reproachfully. † Gr. for their railing.
15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.
16 If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.
17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.
18 For the scripture saith, *Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, *The labourer is worthy of his reward. *Deut. 25. 4. *Matth. 10. 10.
19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but ‖ before two or three witnesses. ‖Or, under.
20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.
21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things ‖ without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partialitie. ‖Or, without prejudice.
22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sins, keep thy self pure.

23 Drink

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomachs sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sins are open before hand, going before to judgement: and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works of some are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 Servants duties. 3 Avoid new fangled teachers. 6 The gain of godlinesse.

LEt as many servants as are under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour; that the Name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them because they are brethren: but rather do them service, because they are faithfull and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach other wise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse;

4 He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof commeth envie, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

5 Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godlinesse: from such withdraw thy self.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carrie nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil, which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, love, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, untill the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Which

Or, believing.

Or, a fool.

Or, sick.

Or, gallings one of another.

Or, been seduced.

Or, profession.

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed, and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords:
16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.
17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in †uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy.
18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, ‖willing to communicate:
19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.
20 O Timothie, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding prophane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science, falsly so called:
21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie, was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacaciana.

†Or uncertainty of riches.
‖Or sociable.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAUL the apostle to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

1 Pauls love to Timothie, and Timothies faith. 6 Paul giveth him divers exhortations. 15 Of Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 Of Onesiphorus.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus.
2 To Timothie my dearly beloved son: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.
3 I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:
4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy:
5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perswaded that in thee also.
6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.
7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound minde.
8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our

Lord, nat of me his prisoner, but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God:
9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Iesus before the world began:
10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the gospel:
11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.
12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have ||beleeved, and I am perswaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.
13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Iesus.
14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.
15 This thou knowest, ‖all they which are in Asia, be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.
16 The Lord give mercie unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.
17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.
18 The Lord grant unto him that he may finde mercie of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

|| Or, trusted.

CHAP. II.

1 Timothie is exhorted to constancie and perseverance, and to shew himself approved. 17 Of Hymenæus and Philetus. 22 How the Lords servant ought to behave himself.

THou therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.
2 And the things that thou hast heard of me ||among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.
3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.
4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.
5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.
6 ||The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.
7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.
8 Remember that Iesus Christ, of the seed of David, was

|| Or, by.

|| Or, the husbandman labouring first must be partaker of the fruits.

was raised from the dead, according to my gospel:
9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evill doer, even unto bonds, but the word of God is not bound.
10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sake, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternall glorie.
11 It is a faithfull saying, For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him:
12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:
13 If we beleeve not, yet he abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himself.
14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they strive not about words to no profit but to the subverting of the hearers.
15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.
16 But shun prophane and vain babblings, for they will increase unto more ungodlinesse.
17 And their word will eat, as doth a || canker: of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus: || or, gangrene.
18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already: and overthrow the faith of some.
19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth || sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity. || Or, stedie.
20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.
21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto every good work.
22 Flee also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousnesse, faith, charitie, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.
23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.
24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive: but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, || patient: || Or, forbearing.
25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth. † Greek, awake.
26 And that they may † recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are † taken captive by him at his will. † Gr. taken alive.

CHAP. III.

1 Of the last day. 6 The enemies of the truth are described. 10 Pauls example propounded. 16 The scriptures commended.

THis know also, that in the last dayes perilleus times shall come.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankfull, unholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers || false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

Or, make-bates.

4 Traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more then lovers of God;

5 Having a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

Or, of no judgement.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, as their also was.

Or, thou hast been a diligent follower of.

10 But || thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evill men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousnesse:

Or, perfected.

17 That the man of God may be perfect, || throughly furnished unto all good workes.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls exhortation to Timothie. 6 The neernesse of Pauls death. 9 Paul willeth him to come to him.

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heape to themselves teachers, having itching ears,

4 And

4 And they shall turn away their eares from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the worke of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministery.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. (Or, fulfill.)

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous Iudge shall give me at that day: and not to me onely, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil, the Lord reward him according to his workes.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge. (Or, our preachings.)

17 Notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me, and strengthned me, that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil worke, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter: Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ The second epistle unto Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to TITUS.

CHAP. I.

1 Why Titus was left in Creet. 6 How miniſters ſhould be qualified. 11 of evil teachers.

PAul a ſervant of God, and an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godlineſſe:

2 ‖ In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promiſed before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifeſted his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus mine owne ſon after the common faith, grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt our Saviour.

5 For this cauſe left I thee in Creet, that thou ſhouldeſt ſet in order the things that are ‖ wanting, and ordain elders in every citie, as I had appointed thee.

6 If any be blameleſſe, the husband of one wife, having faithfull children, not accuſed of riot or unruly.

7 For a biſhop muſt be blameleſſe, as the ſteward of God: not ſelf-willed, not ſoon angry, not * given to wine, no ſtriker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hoſpitalitie, a lover of ‖ good men, ſober, juſt, holy, temperate,

9 Holding faſt the faithfull word, ‖ as he hath been taught, that he may be able by ſound doctrine, both to exhort, and to convince the gainſayers.

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers, and deceivers, eſpecially they of the circumciſion:

11 Whoſe mouthes muſt be ſtopped, who ſubvert whole houſes, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucres ſake.

12 One of themſelves, even a prophet of their own, ſaid, The Cretians are alwayes lyars, evill beaſts, ſlow bellies.

13 This witneſſe is true: wherefore rebuke them ſharply, that they may be ſound in the faith;

14 Not giving heed to Jewiſh fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled, and unbeleeving, is nothing pure: but even their mind and conſcience is defiled.

16 They

‖ Or, for.

‖ Or, left undone.

* 1. Tim. 3. 3.

‖ Or, good things.

‖ Or, in teaching

16 They profesſe that they know God; but in workes they deny him, being abominable, and diſobedient, and unto every good worke ‖ reprobate.

‖ Or, void of judgement.

CHAP. II.

1 Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 The dutie of ſervants, and in generall of all Chriſtians.

BUt ſpeak thou the things which become ſound doctrine:
2 That the aged men be ‖ ſober, grave, temperate, ſound in faith, in charitie, in patience,

‖ Or, vigilant.

3 The aged women likewiſe, that they be in behaviour as becometh ‖ holineſſe, not ‖ falſe accuſers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

‖ Or, holy women. ‖ Or, makebates.

4 That they may teach the young women to be ‖ ſober, to love their husbands, to love their children,
5 To be diſcreet, chaſte, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blaſphemed.

‖ Or, wiſe. ‖ Or, diſcreet.

6 Young men likewiſe exhort to be ‖ ſober-minded.
7 In all things ſhewing thy ſelf a patern of good workes: in doctrine ſhewing uncorruptneſſe, gravitie, ſinceritie,
8 Sound ſpeech that cannot be condemned, that he that is of the contrary part, may be aſhamed, having no evil thing to ſay of you.
9 Exhort ſervants to be obedient unto their own maſters, and to pleaſe them well in all things, not ‖ anſwering again:

‖ Or, gainſaying.

10 Not purloining, but ſhewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.
11 For the grace of God ‖ that bringeth ſalvation, hath appeared to all men,

‖ Or, that bringeth ſalvation to all men hath appeared.

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlineſſe and worldly luſts, we ſhould live ſoberly, righteouſly, and godly in this preſent world:
13 Looking for that bleſſed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt,
14 Who gave himſelf for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquitie, and purifie unto himſelf a peculiar people, zealous of good workes.
15 Theſe things ſpeak and exhort, and rebuke with all authoritie. Let no man deſpiſe thee.

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is further directed what to teach, and what not. 10 To reject obſtinate hereticks: 12 and appointed by Paul to come unto him.

PUt them in minde to be ſubject to principalities & powers, to obey magiſtrates, to be ready to every good worke,
2 To ſpeak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, ſhewing all meekneſſe unto all men.
3 For we our ſelves alſo were ſometimes fooliſh, diſobedient, deceived, ſerving divers luſts and pleaſures, living in malice, and envie, hateful, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ‖ love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

‖ Or, pitie

5 Not by works of righteousnesse which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost:

6 Which he shed on us † abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour:

† Greek, richly.

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be carefull to maintain good works: these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law, for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to ‖ maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitfull.

‖ Or, professe honest trades.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO PHILEMON.

4 Pauls joy for Philemons faith and love. 9 He desireth him to forgive Onesimus, and to receive him again.

PAul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothie our brother unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the church in thy house:

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints,

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoyn thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministred unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever.

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apostle to the HEBREVVS.

CHAP. I.

1 Christ in these last times coming to us from the Father, 4 is preferred above angels.

GOd who at sundry times, and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,
2 hath in these last dayes spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

* Wisd. 7.26. 3 * Who being the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the majestie on high:

4 Being made so much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

6 And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

† Greek, rightnesse, or, straitnesse. 8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a sceptre of † righteousnesse is the sceptre of thy kingdom:

9 Thou hast loved righteousnesse, and hated iniquity, therefore God, even thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladnesse above thy fellows.

* Psal. 102.25. &c. 10 And, * Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: & the heavens are the works of thine hands.

* Isaiah 34.4. 11 * They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy yeers shal not fail.

* Psal. 110.1. Matth. 22.44. 13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, * Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

CHAP. II.

1 We must be obedient unto Christ, 5 because he took our nature upon him, as it was necessary he should.

† Gr. run out as leaking vessels. THerefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should † let them slip.

2 For if ỳ word spoken by angels was stedfast, & every transgression & disobedience received a just recompence of reward:

3 How

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him,

4 God also bearing them witnesse both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and ‖ gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his own will?

‖ Or, distributions.

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, * What is man that thou art mindefull of him: or the son of man that thou visitest him?

* Psa. 8. 4

7 Thou madest him ‖ a little lower then the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

‖ Or, a little while inferiour to.

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower then the angels, ‖ for the suffering of death, crowned with glory & honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

‖ Or, by.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he † that sanctifieth, & they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

* Psal. 18. 2.

13 And again, * I will put my trust in him: and again, * Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

* Isaiah. 8. 18.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil:

† Gr. he taketh not hold of angels, but of the seed of Abraham he taketh hold.

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their life time subject to bondage.

16 For verily † he took not on him the nature of angels: but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a mercifull and faithfull high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses: 7 Therefore we are the more bounden to beleeve him.

WHerefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus,

2 Who

† Greek, made.

2 Who was faithfull to him that † appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

1. Sam. 12.6.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithfull in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoycing of the hope firm unto the end.

* Psal. 95.7.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourty yeers.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway erre in their hearts, and they have not known my wayes.

†Greek, if they shall enter.

11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evill heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called, To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sin.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.

15 While it is said, To day if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved fourty yeers? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wildernesse?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of unbelief.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The Christian rest is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By our high Priest Jesus we may go boldly to the throne of grace.

LEt us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entring into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached as well as unto them: but † the word preached did not profit them, ‖ not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest, although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom ‖ it was first preached, entred not in because of unbelief:

7 Again he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

8 For if ‖ Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a ‖ rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of ‖ unbelief.

12 For the word of God is quick, and powerfull, and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Seeing then that we have a great high Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercie, and finde grace to help in time of need.

† Gr. the word of hearing.

‖ Or, because they were not united by faith to.

‖ Or, the gospel was first preached.

‖ That is, Josuah.

‖ Or, keeping of a sabbath.

‖ Or, disobedience.

CHAP. V.

1 The authoritie and honour of Christs priesthood. 11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproved.

FOr every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins.

2 Who ‖ can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmitie.

‖ Or, can reasonably bear with.

3 And

2 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high Priest: but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard || in that he feared:

8 Though he were a son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milk, † is unskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are || of full age, even those who by reason || of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth not to fall back from the faith, 11 but to be stedfast to wait upon God: 13 who is sure in his promises.

Therefore leaving || the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightned, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft

|| Or, for his pietie.

† Greek, hath no experience.

|| Or, perfect. || Or, of an habit. || Or, perfection.

|| Or, the word of the beginning of Christ

upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them || by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God. ||Or, for.

8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloved, we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his Name, in that ye have ministred to the saints, and do minister.

11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end.

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsell, †confirmed it by an oath. †Gr. interposed himself by an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vail,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entred, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ is a priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 far above the priests of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace:

3 Without father, without mother, †without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually. †Greek, without pedegree.

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham:

6 But

2 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high Priest: but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard ‖ in that he feared:

‖ Or, for his pietie.

8 Though he were a son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

† Greek, hath no experience.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

‖ Or, perfect.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

‖ Or, of an habit, or, perfection.

13 For every one that useth milk, † is unskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are ‖ of full age, even those who by reason ‖ of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evill.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth not to fall back from the faith, 11 but to be stedfast to wait upon God: 13 who is sure in his promise.

‖ Or, the word of the beginning of Christ

THerefore leaving ‖ the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightned, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the power of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft

upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them ‖ by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God. ‖Or, for.

8 But that which beareth thorns, and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloved, we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his Name, in that ye have ministred to the saints, and do minister.

11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end.

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsell, † confirmed it by an oath. †Gr. interposed himself by an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vail,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entred, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ is a priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 far above the priests of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace:

3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually. †Greek, without pedegree.

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham:

6 But

6 But he whose ‖ descent is not counted from them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

‖Or, pedegree.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receiue tithes: but there he receiueth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liueth.

9 And as I may so say, Leui also who receiueth tithes, paid tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leuiticall priesthood, (for under it the people receiued the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lord sprang out of Iuda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more euident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnall commandment, but after the power of an endlesse life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verely a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weaknesse and vnprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, ‖ but the bringing in of a better hope did: by the which we draw nigh vnto God.

‖Or, but it was the bringing in.

20 And inasmuch as not without an oath he was made priest.

21 (For those priests were made ‖ without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said vnto him, * The Lord sware, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec)

‖Or, without swearing of an oath.

* Psal. 110.4

22 By so much was Iesus made a surety of a better testament.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.

24 But this man, because he continueth euer, hath an ‖ vnchangeable priesthood.

‖Or, which passeth not from one to another.

25 Wherefore he is able also to saue them ‖ to the vttermost, that came vnto God by him, seeing he euer liueth to make intercession for them.

‖Or, euermore.

26 For such an high priest became vs, who is holy, harmlesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens.

27 Who needeth not daily as those high priests, to offer vp sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered vp himself.

28 For

28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmitie, but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is † consecrated for evermore.

† Or. perfected.

CHAP. VIII.

1 By Christs eternall priesthood, the Leviticall priesthood is abolished: 7 and the temporall covenant, by the eternall covenant.

NOw of the things which we have spoken, this is the sum: We have such an high Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majestie in the heavens:

2 A minister ‖ of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

‖ Or, of holy things.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that ‖ there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

‖ Or, they are priests.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God, when he was about to make the tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the patern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministerie, by how much also he is the mediatour of a better ‖ covenant, which was established upon better promises.

‖ Or, testament.

7 For if that first covenant had been faultlesse, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the daies come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Judah:

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those daies, saith the Lord, * I will † put my lawes into their minde, and write them ‖ in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people

* Jere. 31.33. † Greek, give. ‖ Or, upon.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their unrighteousnesse, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 The rites and bloody ſacrifices of the law. 11 far inferiour to the blood and ſacrifice of Chriſt.

Or, ceremonies.

THen verily the firſt covenant had alſo || ordinances of divine ſervice, and a worldly ſanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the firſt wherein was the candleſtick, and the table, and the ſhew-bread: which is called the || ſanctuary.

Or, holy.

3 And after the ſecond vail, the tabernacle which is called the holieſt of all:

4 Which had the golden cenſer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant.

5 And over it the cherubims of glory ſhadowing the mercy-ſeat: of which we cannot now ſpeak particularly.

6 Now when theſe things were thus ordained, the prieſts went alwayes into the firſt tabernacle, accompliſhing the ſervice of God.

7 But into the ſecond went the high prieſt alone, once every yeer, not without blood, which he offered for himſelf, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holy Ghoſt this ſignifying, that the way into the holieſt of all was not yet made manifeſt, while as the firſt tabernacle was yet ſtanding:

9 Which was a figure for the time then preſent, in which were offered both gifts & ſacrifices, that could not make him that did the ſervice perfect, as pertaining to the conſcience,

10 Which ſtood only in meats, and drinks, and divers waſhings, and carnall || ordinances impoſed on them until the time of reformation.

Or, rites, or, ceremonies.

11 But Chriſt being come an high prieſt of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to ſay, not of this building.

12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves: but by his own blood he entred in once into the holy place, having obtained eternall redemption for us.

13 For if the blood of buls, and of goats, and the aſhes of an heifer ſprinkling the unclean, ſanctifieth to the purifying of the fleſh:

14 How much more ſhall the blood of Chriſt, who through the eternal Spirit offered himſelf without || ſpot to God, purge your conſcience from dead works to ſerve the living God?

Or, fault.

15 And for this cauſe he is the Mediatour of the new teſtament, that by means of death for the redemption of the tranſgreſſions that were under the firſt teſtament, they which are called might receive the promiſe of eternall inheritance.

Or, be brought in.

16 For where a teſtament is, there muſt alſo of neceſſitie || be the death of the teſtatour.

17 For

17 For a teſtament is of force after men are dead: otherwiſe it is of no ſtrength at all whileſt the teſtatour liveth.
18 Whereupon, neither the firſt teſtament was ‖ dedicated without blood. ‖Or, purified.
19 For when Moſes had ſpoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and ‖ ſcarlet wool, and hyſſop, and ſprinkled both the book and all the people, ‖Or, purple.
20 Saying, This is the blood of the teſtament which God hath enjoyned unto you.
21 Moreover, he ſprinkled with blood, both the tabernacle, and all the veſſels of the miniſtery.
22 And almoſt all things are by the law purged with blood: and without ſhedding of blood is no remiſſion.
23 It was therefore neceſſary that the paterns of things in the heavens ſhould be purified with theſe, but the heavenly things themſelves with better ſacrifices then theſe.
24 For Chriſt is not entred into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven it ſelf, now to appear in the preſence of God for us.
25 Nor yet that he ſhould offer himſelf often, as the high prieſt entreth into the holy place, every yeer with blood of others.
26 For then muſt he often have ſuffered ſince the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away ſin by the ſacrifice of himſelf.
27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement:
28 So Chriſt was once offered to bear the ſins of many, and unto them that look for him ſhall he appear the ſecond time without ſin unto ſalvation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakneſſe of the ſacrifices of the law, 10 and the power of Chriſts ſacrifice. 19 An exhortation to faith and patience.

FOr the law having a ſhadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with thoſe ſacrifices which they offered yeer by yeer continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.
2 For then would they not have ceaſed to be offered: becauſe that the worſhippers once purged, ſhould have had no more conſcience of ſins.
3 But in thoſe ſacrifices there is a remembrance again made of ſins every yeer.
4 For it is not poſſible that the blood of buls and of goats ſhould take away ſins.
5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he ſaith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldeſt not, but a body ‖ haſt thou prepared me: ‖Or, thou haſt fitted me.

6 In burnt-offerings, and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Lo, I come, (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the law:

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will (O God:) he taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every priest standeth daily ministring and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.

12 But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God:

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to us: for after that he had said before,

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will put my lawes into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them:

* Jere. 31. 33.

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

19 Having therefore, brethren, ‖ boldnesse to enter into the holiest, by the blood of Jesus,

‖ Or, libertie.

20 By a new and living way which he hath ‖ consecrated for us, through the vail, that is to say, his flesh:

‖ Or, new made.

21 And having an high priest over the house of God,

22 Let us draw neer with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evill conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithfull that promised)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another; and so much the more as ye see the day approaching.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearfull looking for of judgement, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

28 He

28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despight unto the Spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath said, * Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompence, saith the Lord: and again, The Lord shall judge his people. * Deut. 32.35. Rom. 12.19.

31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions.

33 Partly whilst ye were made a gazing stock, both by reproaches and afflictions, and partly whilst ye became companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God ye might receive the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition: but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.

CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without faith we cannot please God. 7 The worthy fruits thereof in the fathers of old time.

NOw faith is the ‖ substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. ‖ Or, ground, or, confidence.

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead ‖ yet speaketh. ‖ Or, is yet spoken of.

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death, and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, ‖moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

‖Or, being wary.

8 By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a citie which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a childe when she was past age because she judged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

†Or, according to faith.

13 These all died †in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were perswaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15 And truly, if they had been mindefull of that country, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned:

16 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

17 By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac, and he that had received the promises, offered up his onely begotten son.

‖Or, to

18 ‖Of whom it was said, that in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead: from whence also he received him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped leaning upon the top of his staffe.

‖Or, remembred.

22 By faith Joseph, when he died, ‖made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three moneths

neths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child, and they not afraid of the kings commandment.

24 By faith Moses, when he was come to yeers, refused to be called the son of Pharaohs daughter:

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasure of sin for a season:

26 Esteeming the reproach ‖ of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward. ‖ Or, for Christ.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king; for he endured as seeing him who is invisible.

28 Through faith he kept the passeover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the red-sea, as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them ‖ that beleeved not, when she had received the spies with peace. ‖ Or, that were disobedient.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samplon, and of Jephthae, of David also, and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weaknesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were * tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection. * 2. Mac. 7. 7.

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreover, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandred about in sheepskins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandred in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens, and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report, through faith, received not the promise:

40 God having ‖ provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect. ‖ Or, foreseen.

CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to constant faith, patience and godlinesse.
22 A commendation of the new testament above the old.

WHerefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every

waight and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us
run with patience the race that is set before us,

Or, beginner. 2 Looking unto Jesus, the ‖ authour and finisher of our
faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the
crosse, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand
of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that indured such contradiction of sin-
ners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto
you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chas-
tening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth
every son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with
sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, wherof all are par-
takers, then are ye bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh which cor-
rected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much
rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits and live?

10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened us after their
own pleasure, but he for our profit, that we might be partak-
ers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joy-
ous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yeeldeth the
peaceable fruit of righteousnesse, unto them which are exer-
cised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the
feeble knees,

Or, even 13 And make ‖ straight paths for your feet, lest that which
is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, without
which no man shall see the Lord:

Or, fall from. 15 Looking diligently, lest any man ‖ fall of the grace of
God, lest any root of bitternesse springing up trouble you, and
thereby many be defiled;

16 Lest there be any fornicator, or prophane person, as Esau,
who for one morsell of meat sold his birth right.

17 For ye know how that afterward when he would have
inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place
of repentance though he sought it carefully with teares.

Or, way to change his minde 18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be
touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackenesse, and
darknesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words,
which voyce they that heard, intreated that the word should
not be spoken to them any more.

20 (For they could not endure that which was com-
manded:

manded: and if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.)

22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

23 To the general assembly, and church of the first-born, which are ‖ written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

‖ Or, enrolled.

24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new ‖ covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

‖ Or, testament.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:

26 Whose voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that ‖ are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

‖ Or, may be shaken.

28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, ‖ let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.

‖ Or, let us hold fast.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Divers admonitions to charitie and other godly vertues.
20 The conclusion of this epistle.

LEt brotherly love continue.

2 Be not forgetfull to entertain strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them: and them which suffer adversitie, as being your selves also in the bodie.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

5 Let your conversation be without covetousnesse: and be content with such things as ye have. For he hath said, * I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee:

* Josh. 1. 5.

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

7 Remember them which ‖ have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

‖ Or, are the guides.

8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

2 Be

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

10 We have an altar whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuarie by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach.

14 * For here have we no continuing citie, but we seek one to come.

15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is the fruit of our lips, † giving thanks to his Name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

17 Obey them that ‖ have the rule over you, and submit your selves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience in all things willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting ‖ covenant,

21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, ‖ working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glorie for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation: for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye, that our brother Timothie is set at libertie, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

The writting to the Hebrews from Italy by Timothie.

* Mich. 2. 10.

† Greek, confessing to.

‖ Or, guide.

‖ Or, testament.

‖ Or, doing.

THE

THE GENERALL EPISTLE of JAMES.

CHAP. I.

2 We muſt rejoyce under the croſſe, and aſk patience of God. 19 Hear the word, and do thereafter. 26 What pure religion is.

JAmes a ſervant of God, and of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, to the twelve tribes which are ſcattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations,

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wiſdom, let him aſk of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not, and it ſhall be given him.

6 But let him aſk in faith, nothing wavering: for he ẏ wavereth is like a wave of the ſea, driven with the wind, & toſſed.

7 For let not that man think that he ſhall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is unſtable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree ||rejoyce in that he is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: becauſe as the flower of the graſſe he ſhall paſſe away. ||Or, glorie.

11 For the ſun is no ſooner riſen with a burning heat, but it withereth the graſſe, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the faſhion of it periſheth: ſo alſo ſhall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Bleſſed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tryed, he ſhall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promiſed to them that love him.

13 Let no man ſay when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with ||evill, neither tempteth he any man. ||Or, evils.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own luſt, and enticed.

15 Then when luſt hath conceived, it bringeth forth ſin: and ſin, when it is finiſhed, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableneſſe, neither ſhadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kinde of first-fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of naughtinesse, and receive with meekenesse the ingrafted word, which is able to save your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your owne selves.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his naturall face in a glasse.

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straight way forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall be blessed in his ‖ deed.

‖Or, doing.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherlesse and widowes in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

2 Christians must not regard the rich, and despise the poor.
14 Faith without works is a dead faith.

MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

†Or, synagogue.

2 For if there come unto your †assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment:

‖Or, well, or, seemly.

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here ‖ in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:

‖Or, that.

4 Are ye not then partiall in your selves, and are become judges of evill thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloved brethren, hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of ‖ the kingdom, which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the judgement seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy Name by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royall law, according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, ye do well.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressours.

10 For

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For ‖ he that said, Do not commit adulterie, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the law.

‖ Or, that law which said.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of libertie.

13 For he shall have judgement without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy ‖ rejoyceth against judgement.

‖ Or, glorieth.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needfull to the body: what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being † alone.

† Gr by it self.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith ‖ without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

‖ Some copies read, by thy works.

19 Thou believest that there is one God, thou doest well: the devils also believe and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

22 ‖ Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

‖ Or, thou seest.

23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousnesse: and he was called the friend of God.

* Gene. 15. 6. Rom. 4. 3. Gal. 3. 6.

24 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the ‖ spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

‖ Or, breath.

CHAP. III.

2 The tongue must be bridled. 13 They are truly wise who be milde and peaceable, without envying.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater ‖ condemnation.

‖ Or, judgement.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouthes, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and

and are driven of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whither soever ỳ governour listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member and boasteth great things: behold, how great ‖ a matter a little fire kindleth.

‖Or, wood.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquitie: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth ỳ whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, & it is set on fire of hel.

ỳ Gr. nature.

7 For every † kinde of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of † mankinde.

† Greek, nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly evill, full of deadly poison.

9 Therewith blesse we God, even the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

‖Or, holie.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same ‖ place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yeeld salt water & fresh.

13 Who is a wise man, and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meeknesse of wisdom.

‖Or, naturall.

14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

† Greek, tumult, or, unquietnesse.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, ‖ sensuall, devilish.

‖Or, without wrangling.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is † confusion, and every evill work.

17 But the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, ‖ without partiality, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sown in peace of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Against covetousnesse, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction, and rash judgement.

‖Or, brawlings.

FRom whence come wars and ‖ fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your ‖ lusts, that war in your members?

‖Or, pleasures.

2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amisse, that ye may consume it upon your ‖ lusts.

‖Or, pleasures.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmitie with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Do

5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth || to envie?

6 But he giveth more grace, wherefore he saith, *God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

7 Submit your selves therefore to God: resist the devill, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purifie your hearts ye doubleminded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heavinesse.

10 Humble your selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

11 Speak not evill one of another (brethren) he that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

13 * Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a yeer, and buy and sell, and get gain:

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow: for what is your life? || it is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live and do this or that.

16 But now ye rejoyce in your boastings: all such rejoycing is evill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sin.

CHAP. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 9 Of patience. 12 To forbear swearing. 13 To pray in adversitie, and sing in prosperitie.

GO to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cryeth: and the cryes of them which have reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabbaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned, and killed the just, and he doth not resist you.

7 || Be

[or, envieth.]

* Prov. 3.34. 1. Pet. 5.5.

* Prov. 27.1.

[or, for it is.]

7 ‖ Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient, stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ‖ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed ‖ earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

Or, be long patient, or, suffer with long patience.

‖ Or, groan, or, grieve not.

‖ Or, in his prayer.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He bleſſeth God for his ſpirituall graces. 10 Salvation is in Chriſt propheſied of old. 13 An exhortation to godlineſſe.

PEter an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, to the ſtrangers ſcattered throwout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Aſia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through ſanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and ſprinkling of the blood of Jeſus Chriſt: Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

3 Bleſſed be the God and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, which according to his † abundant mercie hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt from the dead,

† Greek much.

4 To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reſerved in heaven || for you.

|| Or, for us.

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto ſalvation, ready to be revealed in the laſt time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoyce, though now for a ſeaſon (if need be) ye are in heavineſſe through manifold temptations.

7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then of gold that periſheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praiſe, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jeſus Chriſt.

8 Whom having not ſeen, ye love: in whom though now ye ſee him not, yet beleeving ye rejoyce with joy unſpeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the ſalvation of your ſouls.

10 Of which ſalvation the prophets have enquired, and ſearched diligently, who propheſied of the grace that ſhould come unto you.

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Chriſt which was in them did ſignifie, when it teſtified before hand the ſufferings of Chriſt, and the glorie that ſhould follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themſelves, but unto us they did miniſter the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the goſpel unto you, with the holy Ghoſt ſent down from heaven, which things the angels deſire to look into.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your minde, be sober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

† Greek perfectly

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

* Levit. 11.44. & 19.2. & 20.7.

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, passe the time of your sojourning here in fear:

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish, and without spot.

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfained love of the brethren: see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

‖ Or, for that.

24 ‖ For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flower of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

1 He dehorteth them from the breach of charitie, 4 shewing that Christ is the foundation. 13 Obedience to magistrates. 18 Servants duties.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 As new born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

‖ Or, be ye built.

3 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Ye also as lively stones, ‖ are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifice, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

* Psal. 118.22. Isaiah 28.16. Matth. 21.42. Act. 4.11

6 Wherefore it is contained in the scripture, * Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto

7 Unto you therefore which believe he is ‖ precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

‖ Or, he is an honour.

8 * And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

* Isaiah 8.14.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, ‖ a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the ‖ praises of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

‖ Or, a purchased people.

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

‖ Or, vertues.

* Hosea 2.23.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that ‖ whereas they speak against you as evill doers, they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

‖ Or, wherein.

13 Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the king, as supreme,

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not † using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousnesse, but as the servants of God.

† Greek, having.

17 ‖ Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

‖ Or, esteem.

18 Servants be subject to your masters with all fear, not onely to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is ‖ acceptable with God.

‖ Or, thank.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered ‖ for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps.

‖ Some read, for you.

22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he suffered, he threatned not, but ‖ committed himself to him that judgeth righteously.

‖ Or, committed his cause.

24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body ‖ on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.

‖ Or, to.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your minde, be sober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

† Greek perfectly

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

* Levit. 11.44. & 19.2. & 20.7.

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, passe the time of your sojourning here in fear:

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish, and without spot.

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfained love of the brethren: see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

‖ Or, for that.

24 ‖ For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flower of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

1 He dehorteth them from the breach of charitie, 4 shewing that Christ is the foundation. 13 Obedience to magistrates. 18 Servants duties.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 As new born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

‖ Or, be ye built.

3 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

* Psal. 118.22. Isaiah 28.16. Matth. 21.42. Act. 4.11

5 Ye also as lively stones, ‖ are built up a spirituall house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the scripture, * Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto

7 Unto you therefore which believe he is ‖ precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

‖ Or, he is an honour.

8 * And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

* Isaiah 8.14.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, ‖ a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the ‖ praises of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

‖ Or, a purchased people.

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

‖ Or, vertues.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

* Hosea 2.23.

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that ‖ whereas they speak against you as evill doers, they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

‖ Or, wherein.

13 Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the king, as supreme,

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not † using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousnesse, but as the servants of God.

† Greek, having.

17 ‖ Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

‖ Or, esteem.

18 Servants be subject to your masters with all fear, not onely to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is ‖ acceptable with God.

‖ Or, thank.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered ‖ for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps.

‖ Some read, for you.

22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he suffered, he threatned not, but ‖ committed himself to him that judgeth righteously.

‖ Or, commited his cause,

24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body ‖ on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.

‖ Or, to

25 For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

CHAP. III.

1 The dutie of wives and husbands each to other. 8 An exhortation to unitie, 14 and to suffer persecution. 19 Christs benefits to the old world.

LIkewise ye wives be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives:

2 While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.

3 Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparell:

4 But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose † daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

† Gr. children

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessell, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally, be ye all of one minde, having compassion one of another, || love as brethren, be pitifull, be courteous:

|| Or, loving to the brethren.

9 Not rendring evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For * he that will love life, & see good dayes, let him refrain his tongue from evil, & his lips that they speak no guile

* Psa. 34. 12, &c.

11 Let him eschew evil and do good, let him seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is † against them that do evil.

† Greek upon.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake, happy are ye, and be not * afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled:

* Isaiah 8. 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready alwayes to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and || fear.

|| Or, reverence.

16 Having a good conscience, that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conversation in Christ.

17 For

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing, then for evill doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the Just for the unjust: (that he might bring us to God) being put to death in the flesh, but quickned by the Spirit.

19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is eight soules, were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, even baptisme, doth also now save us, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers being made subject unto him.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to flee from sin, 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same minde: for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin:

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, revellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking evil of you:

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand, be ye therefore sober and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charitie among your selves: for charitie || shall cover the multitude of sins.

|| Or, will.

9 Use hospitalitie one to another without grudging.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus

Christ; to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.

13 But rejoyce inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as a busie-body in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalf.

17 For the time is come that judgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

19 Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithfull Creatour.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks, 5 the younger to obey, 8 and all to be sober, watchfull, and constant, 9 to resist the devill.

THe elders which are among you, I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

2 Feed the flock of God || which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthie lucre, but of a ready minde.

|| Or, as much as in you is

3 Neither as || being lords over Gods heritage: but being ensamples to the flock.

|| Or, overruling.

4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto the elder: yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humilitie: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selves therefore under the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

7 Casting all your care upon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversary the devill, as a roaring lion walketh about seeking whom he may devour.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions

afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us into his eternall glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus a faithfull brother unto you, (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my son.

14 Greet ye one another with a kisse of charity: Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to make their calling sure. 14 He speaketh of his own death, 16 and warneth them to be constant in faith.

SImon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godlines, through the knowledge of him that hath called us || to glory and vertue;

Or, by.

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises; that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance, and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling an election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you up, by putting you in remembrance.

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as * our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

* John 21.18.

15 Moreover, I will indeavour that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his majestie.

17 For he received from God the father honour and glorie, when there came such a voice to him from ỳ excellent glorie, This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophesie, whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-starre arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

21 For the prophesie came not ‖ in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, at any time.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, 10 and fully describeth their manners.

BUt there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

‖ Or, lascivious wayes. as some copies reade,

2 And many shall follow their ‖ pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evill spoken of.

3 And through covetousnesse shall they with fained words make merchandise of you; whose judgement now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darknesse, to be reserved unto judgement:

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth

person

person, a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly:

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawfull deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleannesse, and despise || government. * Presumptuous are they, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

11 Whereas angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation || against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousnesse, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of † adultery, and that cannot cease from sin, beguiling unstable souls, an heart they have exercised with covetous practises: cursed children.

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousnesse:

16 But was rebuked for his iniquitie, the dumb asse speaking with mans voice, forbade the madnesse of the prophet.

17 These are wels without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserved for ever.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through || lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnes, those that were clean escaped from them who live in errour.

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousnesse, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But

|| Or, dominion. * Jude 8. || Some reade against themselves. † Greek, an adultereresse. || Or, for a little, or, a while, as some read.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

1 The certainty of Christs coming to judgement. 10 The manner how the world shall be destroyed. 11 An exhortation to godlinesse.

THis second epistle (beloved) I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure mindes by way of remembrance.

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandement of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation:

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth † standing out of the water, and in the water.

† Greek, consisting.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeers, and a thousand yeers as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in the which the heavens shall passe away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shalbe burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation, and godlinesse?

12 Looking for and ‖ hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat.

‖ Or, hasting the coming.

13 Nevertheless, we according to his promise, look for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And

15 And account that the long ſuffering of our Lord is ſalvation, even as our beloved brother Paul alſo, according to the wiſdom given unto him, hath written unto you.

16 As alſo in all his epiſtles, ſpeaking in them of theſe things, in which are ſome things hard to be underſtood, which they that are unlearned and unſtable wreſt, as they do alſo the other ſcriptures unto their own deſtruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, ſeeing ye know theſe things before, beware, leſt ye alſo being led away with the errour of the wicked, fall from your own ſtedfaſtneſſe.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt: to him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 He deſcribeth the perſon of Chriſt, in whom is eternall life, by a communion with God: 5 To which we muſt joyn holineſſe of life.

THat which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have ſeen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life:

2 (For the life was manifeſted, and we have ſeen it, and bear witneſſe, and ſhew unto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifeſted unto us:)

3 That which we have ſeen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye alſo may have fellowſhip with us: and truely our fellowſhip is with the Father, and with his Son Jeſus Chriſt.

4 And theſe things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the meſſage which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkneſſe at all.

6 If we ſay that we have fellowſhip with him, and walk in darkneſſe, we lie, and do not the truth:

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowſhip one with another, and the blood of Jeſus Chriſt his Son cleanſeth us from all ſin.

8 If we ſay that we have no ſin, we deceive our ſelves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confesse our sins, he is faithfull and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousnesse.
10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ our advocate. 3 To know God is to keep his commandments, 9 to love our brethren, 15 and not to love the world.

MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:
2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.
3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.
4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.
5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.
6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.
7 Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.
8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.
9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now.
10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none †occasion of stumbling in him.
11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.
12 I write unto you little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his Names sake.
13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.
14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.
15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.
16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of

† Greek, scandall.

of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time, and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? he is Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternall life.

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming. ‖Or, it.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ‖ ye know that every one that doth righteousnesse, is born of him. ‖Or, know ye.

CHAP. III.

1 God manifesteth his love in making us his sons: 3 who must be pure as he is pure.

BEhold, what manner of love the father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God, therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know, that when he shal appear, we shalbe like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins, and in him is no sin.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousnesse, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin, is of the devil: for the devil sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the ‖ message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

‖ Or, commandment.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his own works were evill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marvell not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer, and ye know that no murderer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

17 But whoso hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed, and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shal † assure our hearts before him.

† Gr. perswade.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence towards God.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should beleeve on the Name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He warneth them not to beleeve all teachers, but to try them by the rules of the Catholick faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth to brotherly love.

BEloved, beleeve not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world, therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us: hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God, for God is love.

9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen, and do testifie, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confesse that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and beleeved the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is † our love made perfect, that we may have boldnesse in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are we in this world. † Greek, love with us.

18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment, he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We

19 We love him: becauſe he firſt loved us.

20 If a man ſay, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath ſeen, how can he love God whom he hath not ſeen?

21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother alſo.

CHAP. V.

1 He that loveth God, loveth his children, and keepeth his commandments, 3 which to the faithfull are not grievous, 5 Jeſus able to ſave us.

WHoſoever beleeveth that Jeſus is the Chriſt, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him alſo that is begotten of him.

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous.

4 For whatſoever is born of God, overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that beleeveth that Jeſus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, even Jeſus Chriſt, not by water only, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witneſſe, becauſe the Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghoſt: and theſe three are one.

8 And there are three that bear witneſſe in earth, the ſpirit, and the water, and the blood, and theſe three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witneſſe of men, the witneſſe of God is greater: for this is the witneſſe of God, which he hath teſtified of his Son.

10 He that beleeveth on the Son of God, hath the witneſſe in himſelf: he that beleeveth not God, hath made him a liar, becauſe he beleeveth not the record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternall life: and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that beleeve on the Name of the Son of God, and that ye may know that ye have eternall life, and that ye may beleeve on the Name of the Son of God.

14 And

14 And this is the confidence that we have ‖ in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us. ‖ Or, concerning him.

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All unrighteousnesse is sin, and there is a sin not unto death.

18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children keep your selves from idols. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of JOHN.

1 An exhortation to persevere in Christian love and belief, lest they lose the reward of their profession. 10 To avoid seducers

THe elder unto the elect lady, and her children whom I love in the truth: and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth:

2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 Grace be with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who con-

lesse not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to your selves, that we lose not those things which we have ‖ wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evill deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come unto you, and speak † face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

‖ Or, gained. Some copies read, which ye have gained, but that ye receive, &c.

† Gr. mouth to mouth.

THE THIRD EPISTLE of JOHN.

1 Gaius commended for his pietie, 5 and hospitalitie, 7 to true preachers. 9 Diotrephes dispraised for his ambition. 12 The good report of Demetrius confirmed.

THe elder unto the well beloved Gaius, whom I love ‖ in the truth.

‖ Or, truly.

2 Beloved, I ‖ wish above all things that thou maist prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

‖ Or, pray.

3 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which have born witnesse of thy charitie before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well.

7 Because that for his names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doth, prating against us with malicious words: and not con-

content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evill but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evill, hath not seen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak † face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name. † Gr. mouth to mouth.

THE GENERALL EPISTLE of JUDE.

1 An exhortation to constancie in faith. 14 Horrible punishments prepared for false teachers. 20 The godly by prayer and the holy Ghost, grow in grace.

JUde the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercie unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needfull for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousnesse, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them ‖ that beleeved not.

6 And the angels which kept not their ‖ first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darknesse, unto the judgement of the great day. ‖ Or, principalitie,

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after † strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternall fire. † Greek, other,

8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel when contending with the devill, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, *The Lord rebuke thee.

* Zech. 3. 2.

10 But these speak evill of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Wo unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the errour of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of windes, trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame, wandring starrs, to whom is reserved the blacknesse of darknesse for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts, and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having mens persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensuall, having not the Spirit.

20 But ye beloved, building up your selves on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternall life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire: hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the onely wise God our Saviour, be glory and majestie, dominion and power, now and ever. Amen.

THE

THE REVELATION OF Saint JOHN the divine.

CHAP. I.

4 He writeth to the seven Churches of Asia. 7 The coming of Christ. 14 His power and majestie.

THE revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to passe; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimonie of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophesie, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 John to the seven churches in Asia, Grace be unto you, and peace from him, * which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his throne: * Exod. 3. 14.

5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithfull witnesse, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us, * and washed us from our sins in his own blood, * 1 Cor. 15. 20. Col. 1. 18.

6 And hath * made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. * Hebr. 9. 14. * 1. Pet. 2. 5.

7 * Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen. * Matth. 24. 30.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almightie.

9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the Ile that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the Spirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and what thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna,

and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and Philadelphia and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,

15 And his feet like unto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not, *I am the first and the last.

* Isaiah 41.4. & 44.6.

18 I am he that liveth and was dead: and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen, and have the keys of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter.

20 The mysterie of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven churches.

CHAP. II.

What is to be written to the angels of the churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos, 18 Thyatira: and what is worthy praise or dispraise.

UNto the angel of the church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks:

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil, and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:

3 And hast born, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He

7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive,

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall have tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write, These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges,

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satans seat is, and thou holdest fast my Name and hast not denied my faith, even in those dayes wherein Antipas was my faithfull martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of *Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. *Numb. 25.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatyra, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brasse,

19 I know thy works, and charitie, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman *Jezebel, which calleth her self a prophetesse, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. *1. kings 16. 31.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that * I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

* Jer. 11 20 and 17. 10

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (* And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father.

* Psal. 2. 9.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

1 The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved. 10 Of Philadelphia approved. 15 of Laodicea rebuked. 20 Christ standeth at the door and knocketh.

AND unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars, I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. * If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

* 1. Thes. 5. 2. 2. Pet. 3. 10.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the * book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

* Phil. 4. 3. Chap. 20. 12.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the

the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church ‖ of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creation of God, ‖ Or, in Laodicea.

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich: and white raiment, that thou maiest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse do not appear, and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore and repent. * Prov. 3.12. Hebr. 12.5.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 John seeth the throne of God, about which the four and twentie elders are sitting: 10 Who lay down their crowns and worship him that sat upon the throne.

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me, which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone: and there was a raunbow round about the throne in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were four and twenty seats, and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thunderings, and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse, like unto crystall: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and †they rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God almightie, which was, and is, and is to come.

† Gr. they have no rest.

* Isa. 6.3.

9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

* Chap. 5.12.

CHAP. V.

1 The book with seven seals, 9 not to be opened, but by the Lamb slain.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

4 And

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, * the lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, hath prevailed, to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof. * Gene. 49.9.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns, & seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four beasts, and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of ‖ odours, which are the prayers of saints. ‖ Or, incense.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation:

10 * And hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth. * 1. Pet. 2.9.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glorie, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glorie and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twentie elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon, containing a prophesie to the worlds end.

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bowe, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come, and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth

earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse, and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, ‖ A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny, and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

‖ The word chœnix signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, and see.

8 And I looked, and behold a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was death, and hell followed with him: and power was given ‖ unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

‖ Or, to him.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood.

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her ‖ untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

‖ Or, green figs.

14 *And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together, and every mountain and island were moved out of their places:

* Isaiah 34.4.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bond man, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains.

16 *And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

* Luke 13.30.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 The servants of God sealed. 4 The number of the tribes that were sealed. 9 An infinite number before the throne clad in white robes.

AND after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of

of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cryed with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and fourty and four thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders, and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glorie, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arayed in white robes? And whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his Temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall * dwell among them.

16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains

* Chap. 21.3.

* Isaiah 49.10.

* Isaiah 25.8. Chap. 21.4.

tains of waters: * and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seal, seven trumpets are given to seven angels. 3 And to another much incense to offer with the prayers of the saints.

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

2 And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came, and stood at the altar, having a golden censer, and there was given unto him much incense, that he should || offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar, which was before the throne.

|| Or, adde it to the prayers.

4 And the smoak of the incense which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thundrings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed haile, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grasse was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood:

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the starrs, so as the third part of them was darkned: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying thorow the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

1 The fifth angel ſounding, a ſtar falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomleſſe pit. 2 He openeth the pit, and locuſts come forth.

AND the fifth angel ſounded, and I ſaw a ſtar fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomleſſe pit.

2 And he opened the bottomleſſe pit, and there aroſe a ſmoak out of the pit, as the ſmoak of a great furnace, and the ſun and the aire were darkned, by reaſon of the ſmoak of the pit.

3 And there came out of the ſmoak locuſts upon the earth, and unto them was given power, as the ſcorpions of the earth have power:

4 And it was commanded them that they ſhould not hurt the graſſe of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but onely thoſe men which have not the ſeal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they ſhould not kill them, but that they ſhould be tormented five moneths: and their torment was as the torment of a ſcorpion, when he ſtriketh a man.

6 And in thoſe dayes ſhall men ſeek death, and ſhall not finde it, and ſhall deſire to die, and death ſhall flee from them.

7 And the ſhapes of the locuſts were like unto horſes prepared unto battell, and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

9 And they had breſt-plates, as it were breſt-plates of iron, and the ſound of their wings was as the ſound of chariots of many horſes running to battell.

10 And they had tails like unto ſcorpions, and there were ſtings in their tails, and their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomleſſe pit, whoſe name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name ‖ Apollyon. ‖ That is to ſay, a deſtroyer.

12 One woe is paſt, and behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the ſixth angel ſounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God,

14 Saying to the ſixth angel which had the trumpet, Looſe the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were looſed, which were prepared ‖ for an hour, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeer, for to ſlay the third part of men. ‖ Or, at.

16 And the number of the army of the horſemen were two hundred thouſand thouſand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I ſaw the horſes in the viſion, & them that ſat on

on them, having brest plates of fire, and of jacinct, and brimstone. and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoak, and brimstone

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoak, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails, for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold and silver, and brasse, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk.

* Psal. 115.4. and 135. 15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their theft.

CHAP. X.

1 An angel appeareth with a book open. 6 He sweareth that there shall be no more time. 9 John is commanded to eat the book.

AND I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rain-bow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

* Ezek. 2.8. and 3.3.

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and ate

unto it up, and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and assoon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP. XI.

3 Two witnesses prophecie. 6 They have power to shut heaven that it rain not.

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple, † leave out, and measure it not: for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot fourty and two moneths.

3 And ‖ I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the two *olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the dayes of their prophecie: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make war against them, and overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an half, the Spirit of life from God entred into them, and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain † of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

† Greek, cast out.

‖ Or, I will give unto my two witnesses that they may prophesie.

*Zech. 4. 3, 11, 14.

† Greek men.

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever.

16 And the four and twenty elders which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy Name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them, which ‖ destroy the earth.

‖Or, corrupt.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman clothed with the sun travelleth: 4 before whom the dragon standeth ready to devour her childe, 5 Which is caught up unto God

AND there appeared a great ‖ wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

‖Or, signe.

2 And she being with childe, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another ‖ wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

‖Or, signe.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her childe assoon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man-childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her childe was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes.

7 And there was war in heaven, Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels:

8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called

called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world, he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice, saying in heaven, Now is come salvation and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoyce, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them: woe to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flie into the wilderness, into her place: where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman: that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 A beast with seven heads riseth out of the sea, to whom the dragon giveth his power. 11 Another beast coming out of the earth, 16 marketh all in their foreheads.

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were † wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondred after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great
‡Or, to make war. things, and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to
continue fourtie and two moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemie against God,
to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that
dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints,
and to overcome them: and power was given him over all
kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him,
whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb
slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivitie, shall go into captivitie:
* Matth. 26.52. he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword.
Here is the patience, and the faith of the saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth,
and he had two hornes like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before
him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein, to
worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come
down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the
means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight
of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they
should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a
sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give ‡life unto the image of the
‡Gr. breath. beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause
that as many as would not worship the image of the beast
should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor,
‡Gr. to give. free and bond, ‡to receive a mark in their right hand, or in
their foreheads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the
mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding
count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man,
and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lamb with his company standeth on mount Sion. 6 An
angel preacheth the gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 13 The
harvest of the world.

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion,
and with him an hundred fourtie and four thousand,
having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 And

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and fourty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these † were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

† Greek, were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgement is come: and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

* Psa. 146. 5, 6. Acts 14. 15.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, *Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

* Isaiah 21. 9. Jer. 51. 8 Chap. 18. 2.

9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, ‖ from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.

‖ Or, from henceforth saith the spirit, yea.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, *Thrust in thy sickle and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

* Joel 3. 13.

16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple, which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire, & cryed with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepresse of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepresse was trodden without the citie, and blood came out of the winepresse, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The seven angels with the seven last plagues. 3 The song of them that overcome the beast. 7 The seven vialls full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victorie over the beast, & over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing *the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almightie, *just and true are thy waies thou king of saints.

4 *Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy judgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimonie in heaven was opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoak from the glorie of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The angels pour out the vials full of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ cometh as a thief.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your waies and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And

*Exod. 15:1.
*Psal. 145.17.
*Jere. 10.7.

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth, and there fell a noisom and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink, for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were ‖ scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. ‖ Or, burned.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast, and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

15 * Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. * Matth. 24. 43.

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air, and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance

* Jere. 25.15. bſaunce before God, * to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceneſſe of his wrath.

20 And every iſland fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great haile out of heaven, every ſtone about the weight of a talent: and men blaſphemed God, becauſe of the plague of the haile; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3 4 A woman arayed in ſcarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, ſitteth upon the beaſt, 5 which is Babylon. 8 The puniſhment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lamb.

AND there came one of the ſeven angels which had the ſeven vials, and talked with me, ſaying unto me, Come hither, I will ſhew unto thee the judgement of the great whore, that ſitteth upon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the ſpirit into the wilderneſſe: and I ſaw a woman ſit upon a ſcarlet coloured beaſt, full of names of blaſphemie, having ſeven heads and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple, and ſcarlet colour, and † decked with gold and precious ſtone and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthineſſe of her fornication.

† Gr. guilded.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERIE, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

‖Or, fornications.

6 And I ſaw the woman drunken with the blood of the ſaints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jeſus, and when I ſaw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the angel ſaid unto me, Wherefore didſt thou marvell? I will tell thee the myſterie of the woman, and of the beaſt that carieth her, which hath the ſeven heads and ten hornes.

8 The beaſt that thou ſaweſt, was, and is not, and ſhall aſcend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and go into perdition, and they that dwel on the earth ſhall wonder (whoſe names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beaſt that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wiſdom. The ſeven heads are ſeven mountains, on which the woman ſitteth.

10 And there are ſeven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he muſt continue a ſhort ſpace.

11 And the beaſt that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the ſeven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet: but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: *for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull. * 1. Tim. 6. 15.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. Chap. 19. 16.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, untill the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great citie, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her. 9 The kings of the earth lament over her.

AND after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, *Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hatefull bird. * Chap. 14. 8.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the ‖ abundance of her delicacies. ‖ Or, power.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues:

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment & sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. *Isaiah. 47. 8.

9 And

9 And the kings of the earth who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoak of her burning,

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty citie: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:

12 The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all ‖ thyne wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and iron, and marble,

13 And cynamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and ‖ slaves, and soules of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were daintie and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas that great citie, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

18 And cried when they saw the smoak of her burning, saying, What citie is like unto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping, and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great citie Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more at all in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great

great men of the earth: for by thy ſorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of ſaints, and of all that were ſlain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God is praiſed for judging the whore, and avenging the blood of his ſaints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb.

AND after theſe things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, ſaying, Alleluiah, ſalvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgements, for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his ſervants at her hand.

3 And again they ſaid, Alleluia: and her ſmoke roſe up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twentie elders, and the four beaſts fell down, and worſhipped God that ſat on the throne, ſaying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, ſaying, Praiſe our God, all ye his ſervants, and ye that fear him, both ſmall and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as ꝑ voice of mighty thundrings, ſaying, Alleluia: for ꝑ Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her ſelf ready.

8 And to her was granted, that ſhe ſhould be arayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteouſneſſe of ſaints.

9 And he ſaith unto me, Write, * Bleſſed are they which are called unto the marriage ſupper of the Lamb. And he ſaith unto me, Theſe are the true ſayings of God. * Matth. 22.2.

10 And I fell at his feet to worſhip him: and he ſaid unto me, * See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-ſervant, and of thy brethren, that have the teſtimony of Jeſus, Worſhip God: for the teſtimony of Jeſus is the ſpirit of prophecie. * Chap. 22.9.

11 And I ſaw heaven opened, and behold, a white horſe, and he that ſat upon him was called faithfull and true, and in righteouſneſſe he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himſelf.

13 * And he was clothed with a veſture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God. * Iſaiah 63.2.

14 And the armies which were in heaven, followed him upon white horſes, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a ſharp ſword, that with it he ſhould

should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-presse of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, *KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

*Chap. 17. 14.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come, and gather your selves together unto the supper of the great God:

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeers. 6 The first resurrection. 7 Satan let loose again, 10 is cast into the lake. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

AND I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeers,

3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand yeers should be fulfilled: and after that, he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: & I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Jesus, and for the word of God, & which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands: and they lived & reigned with Christ a thousand yeers.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand yeers were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand yeers.

7 And

7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall
be loosed out of his prison.
8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the
four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them
together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of
the sea.
9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and com-
passed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and
fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.
10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the
lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet
are, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.
11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on
it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and
there was found no place for them.
12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God:
and the books were opened, and another book was opened,
which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of
those things which were written in the books, according to
their works.
13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and
death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them:
and they were judged every man according to their works.
14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This
is the second death.
15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of
life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 2 The heavenly Jerusalem.
23 She needeth no sun. 24 The kings of the earth bring their
riches unto her.

AND I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first
heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there
was no more sea.
2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, com-
ing down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride
adorned for her husband.
3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Be-
hold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell
with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall
be with them, and be their God.
4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes:
and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying,
neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things
are passed away.
5 And he that sate upon the throne, said, Behold, I make
all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words
are true and faithful.
6 And he said unto me, It is done: I am Alpha and
Omega,

* Ezek. 38. 2. and 39. 1.
* Chap. 3 5.
Or, grave
* Isaiah 65. 17
2. Pet. 3. 13.
* Chap. 7. 17.
* 2. Cor. 5. 17.
* Chap. 1. 8. & 22. 13.

* Isaiah 55.1. Omega, the beginning and the end, * I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearfull, and unbeleeving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, & sorcerers, and idolaters, and all lyers, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystall;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the citie with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and fourty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the citie was pure gold like unto clear glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper, the second saphir, the third, a chalcedony, the fourth an emerald;

20 The fifth sardonix, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eight, beryll, the ninth a topaz, the tenth a chrysoprasus, the eleventh a jacinct, the twelfth an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls, every severall gate was of one pearl, and the street of the citie was pure gold, as it were transparent glasse.

* Isaiah 59.19. 22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb are the temple of it.

23 And the citie had no need of the sun, neither of the moon

to

to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. * Esaiah 60.3.

25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. * Esaiah 60.11.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lambs book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The river of the water of life. 5 The light of the citie of God, is himself. 18 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lamb shall be in it, & his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name shall be in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun, for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reign for ever and ever. * Chap. 21.23.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, * See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. * Chap. 19.10.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecie of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, * to give every man according as his work shall be. * Rom. 2.6.

13 I

* Isaiah 41.4. 13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testifie unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. * And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

* Isa. 55.1.

18 For I testifie unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecie of this book, * If any man shall adde unto these things, God shall adde unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

* Deut. 4.2. Pro. 30.6

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecie, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy citie, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.